

ONTVANGEN
15 SEP. 1989
CB-KARDEX

CENTRALE LANDBOUWCATALOGUS



0000 0346 7053

Promotor: Dr. Ir. R.A.A. Oldeman
Hoogleraar in de bosteelt en de boscologie

LANDBOUW 1274

Henk Koop

Forest Dynamics

SILVI-STAR: A Comprehensive
Monitoring System

Proefschrift

ter verkrijging van de graad van
doctor in de landbouwwetenschappen,
op gezag van de rector magnificus,
Prof. Dr. H.C. van der Plas
in het openbaar te verdedigen
op dinsdag 26 september 1989
des namiddags te vier uur in de aula
van de Landbouwniversiteit te Wageningen

BIBLIOTHEEK
LANDBOUWUNIVERSITEIT
WAGENINGEN

157.0000

Dr. Henk Koop
Research Institute for Nature Management
PB 46
NL-3956 ZR Leersum

Henk Koop was born the 15 August 1955 in Oldenzaal, The Netherlands. In 1973 he started studies of silviculture at the Agricultural University in Wageningen The Netherlands. In 1980 he graduated with distinction. During his study he specialized in phytosociology, soil science and silviculture. A combination of these disciplines led to a publication on semi-natural forests in Northern Germany in 1981. From 1980 till 1981 as a conscientious objector he served at the Research Institute for Nature Management in Leersum. Since 1982 he is a scientific worker at the same institute.

ISBN 3-540-51577-1 Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg New York
ISBN 0-387-51577-1 Springer-Verlag New York Berlin Heidelberg

This work is subject to copyright. All rights are reserved, whether the whole or part of the material is concerned, specifically the rights of translation, reprinting, re-use of illustrations, recitation, broadcasting, reproduction on microfilms or in other ways, and storage in data banks. Duplication of this publication or parts thereof is only permitted under the provisions of the German Copyright Law of September 9, 1965, in its version of June 24, 1985, and a copyright fee must always be paid. Violations fall under the prosecution act of the German Copyright Law.

© Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg 1989
Printed in Germany

The use of registered names, trademarks, etc. in this publication does not imply, even in the absence of a specific statement, that such names are exempt from the relevant protective laws and regulations and therefore free for general use.

Printing: Beltz Offsetdruck, Hemsbach/Bergstr.
Binding: J. Schäffer GmbH & Co. KG., Grünstadt
2131/3145-543210

Stellingen H. Koop bij het proefschrift: Forest dynamics; SILVI- STAR: A comprehensive monitoring system.

- 1 Bosmodellen die geen herkenbare maten of bosbeelden opleveren, welke bruikbaar zijn voor het beheer, zullen nooit in de praktijk worden toegepast.
Dit proefschrift.
- 2 De opvatting dat de opstandsstructuur van natuurlijke beukenbossen zou tenderen naar zogenaamde uniforme "Hallenbestanden" (o.a. Ellenberg 1978; Sissingh 1977; omslag NBT 50 (1/2) 1978) berust op bestudering van een te korte spontane ontwikkeling van relatief homogene opstanden.
Dit proefschrift.
- 3 De vorming van een struiklaag bij spontane bosontwikkeling is in de meeste bostypen een uitzondering.
Dit proefschrift.
- 4 De verwachting dat door bosbegrazing gesloten bossen aan natuurwaarde winnen, ongeacht hun uitgangssituatie, is ongegrond. De winst zit vooral in begrazing van open plekken en hun overgangen naar bos.
Dit proefschrift.
- 5 Voor bestudering van spontane bosontwikkelingen biedt een heterogene structuur de beste uitgangssituatie. Het maakt hierbij niet uit of deze structuur natuurlijk is of kunstmatig.
- 6 Het begrip potentieel-natuurlijke vegetatie (PNV), ter aanduiding van een ontwikkelingsstadium van de actuele vegetatie naar een bepaald eindstadium, kan alleen beoordeeld worden naar de actuele vegetatiesamenstelling. Het is dus niet nodig de definitie van de PNV te belasten met de aanduiding van een subjectieve tijdslimiet (o.a. Kalkhoven et al. 1976).
- 7 Door concentratie in tijd en ruimte van de overstromingen in de uiterwaarden zal een spontane bosontwikkeling daar nooit verder komen dan een wilgenstadium met een korte vegetatieve verjongingscyclus.
- 8 De douglas, een waardevolle boomsoort voor de houtproductie, vormt door zijn agressieve verjonging een bedreiging voor bossen met een natuurfunctie.
- 9 De in de Boswet geformuleerde herplantplicht staat spontane bosverjonging en een beheer gericht op de natuurfunctie van het bos ernstig in de weg. Daarom moet de wet of de toepassing ervan spoedig aangepast worden aan veranderde maatschappelijke en ecologische omstandigheden.
- 10 Ervaring in het benutten van natuurlijke processen in het bosbeheer verkrijgt men niet door achter een bureau te zitten, noch door binnen een paar jaar achter een veelheid van bureaus te hebben gezeten.
- 11 Tweektaligheid, in de vorm van een dialect naast het ABN, in opvoeding en onderwijs leidt niet alleen tot behoud van de diversiteit aan dialecten maar komt tevens de zuiverheid van het ABN ten goede.

to Professor Dr. Dik Thalen

Abstract

Koop, H. (1989). *Forest Dynamics, SILVI-STAR: A Comprehensive Monitoring System*. Springer, Berlin Heidelberg New York Tokyo.

No matter what forests are used for, interactions between individual trees and between trees and other forest organisms are what forest managers have to deal with. To learn about these interactions, long-term monitoring of spontaneous forest development is necessary. A complete monitoring system has been developed inclusive of a computer package for analysis of long-term forest dynamics observations. The system's name, "SILVI-STAR", is a composition of SILVigenesis and Single-tree Three-dimensional ARchitecture. A method of nested plot data collection on forest architecture and plant species composition has been worked out for monitoring purposes. The spatial and temporal relations between data are numerically expressed. Therefore a three-dimensional single-tree architectural model has been worked out to describe asymmetric tree shapes with a minimum of measured data points. Time series of forest development at different sites are built up on the basis of a digital descriptive model of the complex reality of forest structure and species composition.

To guarantee continuity in data storage and data query a commercially available database and a geographical information system have been used in the design of the information system. A visual interpretation of data is enabled by graphical system outputs such as profiles and ground plans of tree crown projections, providing substitutes for traditional profile drawings and maps. Application programs were developed to solve specific problem, as a step towards predictive models. In an application program, for integration with remote sensing studies, an aerial view of the forest canopy is simulated on the basis of measured plot data. This view provides a ground-truth reference for the training and interpretation of remote sensing images. To explain the growth of individual trees and the distribution patterns of herbs and tree regeneration on the forest floor, another application was developed, simulating the penetration of direct and of diffuse light. For the reconstruction of forest growth with tree ring data, a technique of animation was elaborated facilitating a visual interpretation of the forest development. The system is applied to demonstrate forest development in some European forest reserves using forest architectural descriptions and vegetation relevés, tree ring data and historical sources.

Additional key-words: forest architecture, tree model, tree rings, light climate, remote sensing, prediction methods.

Preface

Forestry, more than any other form of land use, basically runs on natural processes. Moreover, in many parts of the world forests play a determining role in soil conservation and watershed management. The preservation of forests and of a lasting production capacity demands that natural processes should be explicitly considered in forest management systems (Leibundgut 1959, 1978), so they cannot without concern be pushed into the background by economic or technical progress. On a world-wide scale there is a need for expertise on how to incorporate spontaneous processes in forest management systems. There is very little knowledge of long-term spontaneous forest development and dynamics. Only few data sets on time series from permanent quadrats, repeated forest stand measurements or forest profile analyses exist. Often the information available is restricted to a limited area and site type, to a limited form of management or to a limited set of forest development aspects. Forest managers usually have to rely on their personal, often empirical expertise. For all these reasons, natural forest reserves have been established as open-air laboratories for forest dynamics research in many European countries. The use of computers for data management and processing offers new possibilities for information systems that cover a wide range of forest development processes for many sites and forest types.

About 9 years ago, at the Research Institute for Nature Management (RIN), I set out on the task of developing a comprehensive forest ecological information system for management purposes. Ultimately, this system should enable the prediction of forest dynamics. The level of prediction should link up with the scale of forest management, such as the thinning of trees or groups of trees and its influence on species composition and growth of remaining trees, shrubs, herbs and mosses. The information collected should, among other things, also be suitable for fauna habitat description. Starting with complex physiological modules of stand models would not result in the detail required for individual trees and species other than trees (Dale et al. 1985). In fact, homogeneous stands are the exception rather than the rule in natural forest development, neither would gap models like the JABOWA family (Shugart 1984) offer the degree of detail required.

Therefore I did not choose the convenient way of starting with a simple model that can later be elaborated in more detail, but instead I began developing a digital descriptive model of the complex reality and building up time series of forest development at different sites. To come to a predictive model I carefully chose a system hierarchy for description (sensu O'Neil et al. 1986), attuned to the scale of management and the practical questions that had to be answered. The detail and precision of description has been worked out in an iterative process of feedback between description and the level of explanation required for management purposes. As steps toward the predictive model, on the basis of the data collected, application programs were developed to solve specific problems. These application programs allow causal explanation of pattern and processes at one hierarchical scale by pattern and processes at adjacent system levels. Some specific forest problems had to be tackled first.

Firstly, a forest cannot easily be observed from above and at the same time be examined from the inside, as can be done, for instance, in a heathland vegetation by simply bending down. To create a link between detailed single-tree groundtruth and aerial photographs, a model was worked out to simulate an aerial view with data collected on the ground.

Secondly, the temporal aspects of tree growth and forest-pattern development go beyond the very imagination of a human spectator. Therefore I developed a program that uses the information stored in tree rings to reconstruct and visualize forest development.

Thirdly, light is one of the most important competition factors in forests, where life-forms are adapted to striving to reach the light. So a model for light throughfall has been developed to find causal relations between the occurrence of species, their available resources (radiation) and their growth. This program can be seen as a first step toward predicting further forest development.

Acknowledgements. The Research Institute for Nature Management (RIN) supported and gave direct assistance in the preparation of this book. I owe most to Professor Dr. Dik Thalen for his special inspiration and encouragement and his numerous constructive comments on the draft of this book. Much too soon, he died suddenly on 25 December 1988 at the age of 45. As the head of the department of botany of the RIN, he was the one who took the initiative for a forest monitoring project and supported this study and its preparation as a thesis for my graduation at the Agricultural University in Wageningen (UW). He would have been one of the two promotors at my graduation at the UW.

I am thankful to Professor Dr. Ir. R.A.A. Oldeman of the department of Forest Ecology and Silviculture of the UW for his never-ceasing and stimulating support as my promotor at this graduation. Already during my studies, he created room for my special interests to develop.

Thanks are due to Ir. Ronald van de Winckel, Ir. Rienk-Jan Bijlsma, Drs. Arno van der Kruis, Drs. Henk Siebel and Drs. Johan Gudden, who served as conscientious objectors at the RIN and added to the progress of this book. Rienk-Jan Bijlsma played an important role in working out computer programs and critically following the developments of the project. Without his support the programs FOREYE and CANOPIX would not have been run.

Numerous other individuals have helped: Ir. S. Van der Werf, Drs. G. van Wirdum, Dr. G. Londo, Prof. Ir. M.S. Elzas, Prof. Ir. A. van Maaren, Prof. Ir. D.A. Stellingwerf, Dr. G.F. Peterken read preliminary drafts of the manuscript and made numerous enjoyable comments. Ir. A. Bosch assisted in solving the technical problems of wordprocessing and A. Griffioen prepared the figures in the text.

My thanks go to Ir. Henk Ruissen and the students Karl Blokland, Ryan Bevers, Jaap Wisse, Jeroen Vandeursen and Luc de Kort, who did the hard work of taking tree ring samples and measuring them. Other students carried out part of the field work: Hans van de Bos, Beatrix van Baren and Peter Hilgen.

I am especially grateful to Christel and Annemarie, who took for granted the time I spent preparing this book and disregarding normal family life.

July 1989

Henk Koop

Contents

Part A Design and Structure of the Monitoring System

Chapter 1 Introduction	3
1.1 Problem Analysis	3
1.1.1 Over-Use of Natural Forests	3
1.1.2 Ignorance of Natural Processes in Man-Made Forests	3
1.1.3 Restoration of Man-Made Forests as Natural Areas	5
1.1.4 Lack of Coherent Information on Natural Processes	5
1.1.5 Tools for Prediction	6
1.2 Objectives	8
1.3 Outline of the Text	8
Chapter 2 Design of the System	10
2.1 Phase 1: Working Out Appropriate Techniques for Data Collection	10
2.1.1 Reflections on Plot Size and Frequency of Measurements	10
2.1.2 A Hierarchy for Forest Analysis	12
2.1.3 Nested Plot Design	13
2.2 Phase 2: The Organization of Data Storage and Retrieval	17
2.3 Phase 3: Data Processing and Interpretation	17
Chapter 3 Data Collection and Data Storage	19
3.1 Forest Type Area	21
3.1.1 Mapping of Forest History	21
3.1.2 Mapping of Vegetation Structure	22
3.1.3 Mapping of Vegetation Composition	25
3.2 Core Area	26
3.2.1 Tree Charting	26
3.2.2 Tree Measurements	29
3.2.3 Tree Classifications	30
3.2.4 Tree Ring Sampling	33
3.2.5 Sequential Ground Photography	33
3.2.6 Vegetation Mapping	35
3.3 Woody Transect Area	37
3.3.1 Profile Drawings	37
3.4 Herbaceous Transect Area	39
3.4.1 Permanent Quadrats	39

Part B Data Processing

Chapter 4 The Tree Model	44
4.1 Review of Tree Models	44
4.1.1 Models of Tree Architecture	44
4.1.2 Two-Dimensional Tree Shape Models	45
4.1.3 Three-Dimensional Tree Shape Models	45
4.2 Tree Model Description	46
4.2.1 Crown Projection	47
4.2.2 Crown Projections of Bending Trees	47
4.2.3 Dead Trees	49
4.2.4 Calculation of Unknown Co-Ordinates	49
4.2.5 Transverse Crown Sections	51
4.2.6 Fitting of Transverse Crown Sections	51
4.2.7 Horizontal Crown Sections	54
4.2.8 Fitting of Crown Projections	55
4.3 Modelling Uprooting Mound-and-Pit Micro-Relief	57
Chapter 5 Processing of Primary Tree Characteristics	59
5.1 Computing of Crown Area, Crown Cover, Crown Volume and Basal Area	59
5.2 Statistical Analysis of Tree Data	59
5.3 Two Dimensional Computer Plotting of Forest Structure	59
Chapter 6 Application Programs	64
6.1 Light Simulation	64
6.1.1 The Program FOREYE	65
6.2 Vegetation Data Processing and Forest Structure	68
6.3 Aerial View Simulation	69
6.3.1 The Program CANOPIX	70
6.4 Forest Reconstruction with Tree Ring Data	70
6.4.1 The Program GROWRING	70

Part C Examples of System Application

Chapter 7 Reconstruction of Long-Term Cyclic Forest Dynamics	74
7.1 Cyclic Forest Dynamics in the 600 Years' Unexploited Beech Forest of Fontainebleau (France)	74
7.1.1 Historical Analysis	75
7.1.2 Tree Age Distribution	78
7.1.3 Pattern in the Regeneration Mosaic	79
7.1.4 Forest Growth Reconstruction in a <i>Melico-Fagetum</i> (Core area I)	86
7.1.5 Forest Growth Reconstruction in a <i>Fago-Quercetum</i> (Core area II)	86
7.1.6 Mosaic Development During Regeneration After Management	89
7.2 Cyclic Forest Dynamics in an Unexploited Lime-Hornbeam Forest in Bialowieza (Poland)	93
7.2.1 Historical Analysis	93
7.2.2 Tree Age Distribution	95
7.2.3 Pattern in the Regeneration Mosaic	95
7.2.4 Forest Growth Reconstruction	96

7.2.5	Mosaic Development During Regeneration	103
7.3	Reconstruction of Forest Dynamics in Pasture Woodlands in the New Forest (England)	106
7.3.1	Historical Analysis	106
7.3.2	Pattern in the Regeneration Mosaic	109
7.3.3	Mosaic Development During Regeneration	110
Chapter 8 Reconstruction of Long-Term Non-Cyclic Forest Dynamics		112
8.1	Non-Cyclic Forest Dynamics in Unexploited River-Bank Willow Forest on the Ile De Rhinau (France)	112
8.1.1	Historical Analysis	112
8.1.2	Tree Age Distribution	112
8.1.3	Pattern in Regeneration Mosaic	115
8.1.4	Forest Growth Reconstruction	115
8.1.5	Mosaic Development During Regeneration	117
8.2	Non-Cyclic Forest Dynamics in an Unexploited Adler-Birch Swamp Forest in the Otterskooi (The Netherlands)	119
8.2.1	Historical Analysis	119
8.2.2	Vegetation Pattern and Forest History	120
8.2.3	Forest Architecture and Forest History	121
8.2.4	Tree Species Distribution and Forest History	122
8.2.5	Architectural Compartments and Tree Distribution	123
8.2.6	Potential Natural Vegetation	129
Chapter 9 Monitoring of Forest Dynamics		134
9.1	Stand Dynamics in a Spontaneous Willow Forest in Zuidelijk Flevoland, a Polder Reclaimed in 1968 (The Netherlands)	134
9.2	Herb-Layer Dynamics in Unexploited Beech Forests in the Neuenburger Urwald (Federal Republic of Germany)	137
9.2.1	Herb-Layer Dynamics in a <i>Fago-Quercetum</i>	140
9.2.2	Herb-Layer Dynamics in a <i>Stellario-Carpinetum</i>	143
9.2.3	Conclusion	147
Chapter 10 Studies of Variables in Different Forest Areas		148
10.1	Crown Area Index and Crown Cover Index	148
10.2	Crown Cover per Tree Species	149
10.2.1	Crown Cover of Beech (<i>Fagus sylvatica</i>)	150
10.2.2	Crown Cover of Ash (<i>Fraxinus excelsior</i>) and Oak (<i>Quercus robur</i>)	150
10.3	Relation Between Diameter of the Crown and Diameter of the Bole	151
10.4	Height/Diameter Ratios and Structural Ensembles	155
10.4.1	Height/Diameter Ratios and Structural Ensembles in Beech Dominated Forests of the <i>Fago-Quercetum</i> and <i>Melico-Fagetum</i>	155
10.4.2	Height/Diameter Ratios and Structural Ensembles in Forests of the <i>Alno-Padion</i>	156
Chapter 11 Simulations		160
11.1	Light Plans and Profiles	161
11.1.1	Horizontal Light Patterns	161
11.1.2	Vertical Light Patterns	161

Part D The Potential of SILVI-STAR

Chapter 12 The Monitoring System as a Tool: Some Examples	170
12.1 Forestry	170
12.2 Fauna Habitat Studies	171
12.3 Pollution Impact	172
12.4 Nature Management	172
12.5 Hydrology	173
12.6 Soil Studies	173
12.7 Vegetation Science	173
Chapter 13 Scope for Improvements and Further Development	175
13.1 Restrictions of the System	175
13.2 Prospects for Further Development	176
13.2.1 Data Collection	176
13.2.2 Predictive Models	176
13.3 Problems to Solve	177
Summary	179
References	187
Appendix	204
Glossary	218
Species Index	222
Subject Index	224

Part A Design and Structure of the Monitoring System

Chapter 1

Introduction

1.1 Problem Analysis

Forests are the end stages of a development of natural vegetation and they maintain themselves even in the face of human interference (Ellenberg 1978). Forestry, more than any other form of land use, basically and all but exclusively, rests on natural processes. The fundamental structural and operational relationships recognizable in natural forests go back to the same principles that apply to forestry plantations (Brünig 1981). Therefore, in any type of forest utilization, enough attention should be paid to incorporating of natural processes in forest management practice.

1.1.1 Over-Use of Natural Forests

Until now natural forests have survived in those parts of the world, that are far away from densely populated areas. However, during the past decades, the remaining area of all natural forests, not only the tropical rainforest, has declined enormously. Forests play an important role in conservation of species richness, but at the same time they must provide growing local populations with fuel and meet the increasing needs of the market for timber and pulpwood for the industrialized world. Natural processes are often ignored for short-term economic profit. Natural forests are exploited for valuable trees without consideration of the sustainability of resources, no matter whether it is done by exploitation companies, in irresponsible pursuit of direct gains, or by local people in the daily struggle for life. In many places this led and leads to total forest destruction. Because forests play an essential role in soil conservation and watershed management and probably even, on a world scale, in the stabilization of the atmospheric balance, forest destruction in many cases has an impact on land use far beyond the forest boundaries. Besides political action, alternative management systems for the sustainable use of the complex forest ecosystems (e.g. de Graaf 1986) must be elaborated to stop this disastrous development. Therefore knowledge of these natural processes is indispensable.

1.1.2 Ignorance of Natural Processes in Man-Made Forests

Reafforestation results in man-made forests that are often managed at a high cost of regeneration, much like an agricultural crop. As man-made forests mature and

spontaneous developments can be put to use, less intensive human intervention is necessary for their maintenance.

An example of a continent where progressive forest destruction and recent reafforestation has led to a highly artificial forest cover is Western Europe, with the extreme of a purely man-made forest area in The Netherlands. During mediaeval settlement, here the wooded alluvial zones along the rivers that traversed an extensive area of treeless mires in the West and the North were cleared. Since the Bronze Age, forest devastation by grazing on higher sandy soils has led to an open landscape of heathlands with few isolated woodlands. Continued overgrazing favoured wind erosion, and the area covered by inland wind-blown sand dunes devoid of any vegetation expanded. The few remaining woodland areas were protected, either as hunting reserves or as communal property. These old woodlands were mainly managed as coppice or coppice with standards and in few cases as high forest (Buis 1985). Much of it has now been transformed into forest plantations. In the late eighteenth and nineteenth century, the heathlands and inland dunes were reafforested by private initiative and from 1899 until 1940 by the National Forest Service. As can be clearly seen from the results of the Fourth National Forest Inventory (Dirkse 1987; Dirkse and Thalen 1987), most of the present 9 % forested area has a man-made physiognomy, typical of first and second generation plantations. The second and following generation of forest plantations in The Netherlands is now maturing. Gradually, forest species are recolonizing the forests and trees are starting to regenerate spontaneously. In the past decade there has also been increasing social demand for more natural forests to favour wildlife habitats but also for ecological stabilization. This demand was stressed after the disastrous effects of two storms in 1972 and 1973 that blew down some thousands of hectares of man-made forests. As one of the fundamental principles of future forestry in The Netherlands, the long-term National Forest Plan (Anonymous 1985) states that management measures should follow natural processes and structures as much as possible. However, forest management is not yet prepared to take full advantage of natural processes.

Questions about interactions between trees have to be answered, including questions of thinning and regeneration cuttings, e.g. to what extent is spontaneous thinning in line with management goals? How do individual trees mutually affect each other? What mixture of tree species can coexist on a certain site type? In what phase of stand development does competition between trees have its decisive impact for the ultimate tree species mixture? What is the impact of spatial positions of trees and especially tree crowns upon individual tree growth and tree species coexistence?

Other questions are related to the tree-undergrowth interaction and can be exemplified as: What is the effect of a local forest structure upon lower trees or shrubs, forest floor vegetation, and the germination of trees? What is the impact of the size of canopy gaps upon the spontaneous regeneration of trees on different site types? What is the interaction between the development of the herbaceous vegetation and the spontaneous regeneration of trees in these cases? In both man-made forests and semi-natural or natural forests, preservation of the forest and of a lasting production capacity requires that natural processes be explicitly considered in forest management systems so that they cannot arbitrarily be pushed into the background for economic or technical pretexts. Moreover, good use of what nature provides freely can save money. The ancient Central European forestry tradition is a unique example of integration in management systems of regeneration processes as they take place in natural forests. The scale in space and time of the regeneration regimes mimic the patterns and sequences of phase transitions of natural forests. At the same time, this forestry tradition has outlived many movements in the market, probably because of its flexibility in adapting to changing demands (Leibundgut 1978a; Mayer 1984).

1.1.3 Restoration of Man-Made Forests as Natural Areas

When planning natural areas, e.g. in natural parks, it must be asked, what may be expected from spontaneous forest development of woodlands that have passed through long periods of intensive utilization? Is it necessary to take action in transformation of a current artificial forest structure when forests that have previously been managed for silviculture are planned to be ultimately left unexploited? In what initial state should a forest structure be left unexploited to achieve the best results? For planning in densely populated countries where claims on the land are many, it is important to know the minimum area necessary for the development of spontaneous semi-natural forests on different site types. Culturally imposed forest use, sometimes practised over the ages, e.g. coppice, coppice with standards, forest grazing or high forest, has determined the species composition of these sites (Hesmer and Schröder 1963; Pott 1981). In those areas where natural forest has vanished, the managed forest has become the last refugium for forest species. When the establishment of natural areas is considered, it is important to know what are the niches and the regeneration cycles of individual species of trees, shrubs, herbs and mosses or animals in spontaneously developing forests at different site types. Valued species for nature conservation that are found in managed forests may not find their specific niches in a spontaneous forest development cycle, and their survival may become endangered. Therefore it is necessary to know for conservation of which species nature management has to intervene in spontaneous vegetation development.

Not only in The Netherlands, but on a worldwide scale, there is need for expertise on how to incorporate natural processes in forest management systems. Knowledge of the natural processes serves not only silviculture but also management of nature preservation.

1.1.4 Lack of Coherent Information on Natural Processes

To understand the dynamic character of forest development and the role of natural processes, long-term observations are necessary. However, there is very little knowledge of long-term natural forest development and dynamics. Only few data sets on time series of permanent quadrat survey, repeated forest stand measurements or forest profile analyses exist (Bodegom 1981; Korpel 1974). Often this information is restricted to a limited area and site type or to a limited set of forest development aspects. Study of dynamic aspects of species composition meets with the problem that vegetation changes take such a long time that they go beyond the limits of a project or even beyond a human life-span (Knapp 1974). To cope with this problem, spatial vegetation differences are often used for the interpretation of vegetation changes, and/or short time observations are chained to achieve "time series" or predictions for vegetation development. In England, Rackham (1980) and in Belgium, Hermy and Stieperaere (1981) and Hermy (1985) found clear differences between species composition of ancient and more recent woodlands and could thus evaluate vegetation development in time, always supposing that at least an overall comparison of different sites and stands could be used to establish a time series. In forests, the memory represented by growth rings of trees can often help to trace back the date a regeneration unit started, and thus regeneration units of different age can be chained (Aichinger 1967; Koop 1981). The long duration of forest dynamics makes time series in forests relatively rare. They have

been most successfully studied in the most dynamic phases of forest development or after a definite change in forest management, e.g. after clear-cutting (Dierschke 1978), at the beginning or the end of forest grazing (Malmer et al. 1978), or under controlled anthropogenic pressure, e.g. of trampling (Piotrowska 1978). Kauppi et al. (1978) worked out a time model for development of ground cover communities after clear-cutting. Often, ancient plots, marked in the field or on large-scale maps, were sampled again after some period by other authors. Wiegiers (1985) used plots of van Zinderen-Bakker (1942) and Smittenberg (unpublished) to study succession in Dutch fen woodlands. Similar studies were reported by Christensen (1977) and Davidson and Forman (1982) over a period of 30 years, by Brewer (1980) over a 50-year period. Malmer et al. (1978) and Persson (1980) had a long time series at their disposal, records of 1916, repeated in 1935 and 1969, to reconstruct vegetation changes in a southern Swedish deciduous woodland after forest grazing had been ended. Rozendaal and Sloomweg (1982), van Loon et al. (1985) and Geerdes (1985) studied 25-year old plots of Diemont (unpublished) and Van der Werf (unpublished) in The Netherlands. Bücking (1986) reports on results of permanent plots, first established by Koch and Gaisberg (1938), in a forest reserve in Baden-Württemberg (F.R.G.) repeated every 10 years. Schmidt (1988) gives examples of yearly fluctuations of cover values, number of shoots and flowers of a herb-layer community of terminal stage beech forest on calcareous soil near Göttingen (F.R.G.). Reports on regular records of permanent plots over periods longer than 10 years are hardly available. In most cases where such plots exist, no results have been published. Most methods used for forest monitoring refer to isolated forest components. For instance, only trees, floristic composition or fauna have been studied. Most of the time data for explanatory relations between the forest components are not available. Lack of continuity in research programs, bad documentation and storage of data and lack of comparative methods have caused this lack of information on natural processes in forests (Peterken and Backmeroff 1988). To study spontaneous processes in their pure form without human interference and to ensure some degree of continuity and integration of forest research, in many European countries including The Netherlands, natural forest reserve programs have been started. In the reserves any form of internal human interference has stopped. European forest reserves were first proposed by Hesmer (1934). In the middle of the nineteenth century, already for aesthetic reasons, forests had been reserved, such as in Fontainebleau (France) and in The Neuenburger and Hasbrucher Urwald (F.R.G.). Forest reserve programs in the F.R.G. have been described by Lamprecht (1969), Trautmann (1969), Wilmanns (1977), Genssler (1979) and Bücking (1986). A somewhat similar program is conducted in the D.R.G.: Scamoni (1953), (Niemann 1968). In some other Central European countries also forest reserve programs have been started, e.g. in Switzerland (Leibundgut 1966), Czechoslovakia (Vyskot et al. 1981; Korpel 1982; Prusa 1985) and Austria (Zukrigl 1983). Five British semi-natural forests were recorded for more than 25 years (Peterken and Jones 1987; Peterken and Backmeroff 1988). Other integrated forest research projects were carried out as part of the International Biological Program (e.g. Newbould 1967; Duvigneaud 1971; Bouchon et al. 1973; Falinski 1977, 1986).

1.1.5 Tools for Prediction

Expertise with regard to the incorporation of natural processes in forest management requires the ability to predict what development can be expected in forests in different states and at different sites. Different procedures can be followed to make

predictions. Mostly predictions concerning forest dynamics are based on best personal judgement of managers or scientists. Reliability of that personal judgement is enhanced by long-standing experience, by the communication of experience in circles of experts and by the human memory. In our dynamic modern world, where time is short, very few people have the opportunity to observe forests for longer time periods. Forest managers and decision makers spend most of their time behind their desk or they move after a few years to another office, without having been able to see the effect of their decisions. Times when personal experience could be optimally transmitted to successors, as the job of a forester passed from father to son, seem to have vanished for ever, in any case as concerns the transfer of knowledge. The use of databases as a basis for prediction can help to overcome the limitations of individual human memory and human communication. However, not all experience can be transmitted in a digital form. Large tables of numbers cannot replace or be translated into the vivid pictures of forest states stored in human memory. The risk of building up extensive databases is that they end up as "data cemeteries". The data analysis of time series, or a reconstruction of forest development, allows the assessment of the probability of developments. This assessment, however, includes a final step of personal judgement.

When trying to develop predictive models, it is important to know the nature of the forest vegetation to be modelled. Prior conditions have to be given in function of what should be predicted. Dale et al. (1985) state that "No model will ever predict all of the forest attributes precisely due to complexity and variability of ecological factors affecting tree growth. The best models will explain the model variation from the data and be appropriate for the questions at hand whether they relate to forest management or ecological succession". The heterogeneous nature of the vegetation of natural forests has been described by many authors, e.g. Anonymous (1958), Zukrigl et al. (1963), Barkman (1968, 1970, 1979), Glavac (1972), Zukrigl (1973, 1978), Oldeman (1974a, 1978, 1983, 1989), Koop (1981, 1982) and Prusa (1985). They pay attention to the problems that arise when using traditional methods of phyto-sociology, especially for permanent plot studies.

The authors focus on the patchy character and dynamics of forests in the tree compartment, causing heterogeneity in species composition of forest communities. The structure of the higher layers determines the patchy character of the lower layers (Ellenberg 1939; Eber 1972). At a more detailed scale level, heterogeneity may arise, e.g. when uprooted trees leave a mouldering dead trunk and a mound-and-pit micro-relief (Londo 1977; Beatty 1981; Koop 1981). Not only spatial heterogeneity was identified as a cause of problems, but also the occurrence of sequential or successive phases. Watt (1947) recognized genetically closely related phases as integral parts of a coordinated whole.

Ever since studies at phyto-coenosis level started, scientists have struggled with the heterogeneity of plant communities (Mueller-Dombois and Ellenberg 1974; Jahn 1982; van Wirdum 1987). Samples should preferably be homogeneous as, after classification, the derived associations also (Braun-Blanquet 1964). Godron (1971) tried to solve the homogeneity problem in stating that a vegetation is always more or less heterogeneous. He states that the statistical null hypothesis should not be homogeneity but heterogeneity. The objective of his study is to quantify heterogeneity, considering it no longer as an enemy but as an ally.

The use of computers for data management and processing offers new possibilities for the construction of predictive models that cover a wide range of forest development processes for many sites and forest types. However, there is still quite a gap between scientists who have studied the complex reality of forest architecture in a descriptive way and those who build models starting at the other end on a physiological basis with simple assumptions about forest architecture. The first group spends a great deal of time in the field, the other in the laboratory and in front of a computer screen. Most existing

predictive forest models relate to the growth of no other species than trees, whether in stands or in patches that are assumed to be homogeneous (Shugart 1984; Dale et al. 1985). Relations between trees and other lower forest compartments most often are lacking. Complete simulation of complex forest architecture of natural forest is still beyond the reach of any forest model at present.

1.2 Objectives

The first objective of this study is to develop a method for digital description of forest architecture and species composition for monitoring purposes. The method must allow for the detection of changes in forest vegetation structure and species composition at different scales in space and time. Graphical data, such as maps and profile drawings, therefore need numerical expression. Standardized data collection is required. The collected data should provide a detailed, yet comprehensive, database enabling descriptive and explanatory modelling at different scales for forestry, vegetation science and fauna habitat studies. Spatial arrangement of individual trees and its effects upon gap regeneration and herbaceous vegetation development should be the first main subject for monitoring.

The second objective is to develop an information system that allows searches on many aspects, simultaneously favouring its use for ad-hoc consultancy purposes. Final judgement and application of the information system output should be facilitated. The output on forest dynamics, i.e. patterns and processes, ought to be suitable for direct visual interpretation to enable demonstration to colleagues and managers in the field. To safeguard continuity in data storage and query on a long-term basis, it is necessary to use universal and commercially available database management- and geographical information systems for storage.

The third objective is to develop computer tools for a predictive forest development model. The model should focus on the prediction of the influence of single-tree and tree group expansions and/or removals on the establishment and growth of other organisms, such as trees, shrubs, herbs and mosses in and below such trees or tree groups. The first step towards a predictive model will be a descriptive model based on the information system data, the second the development of explanatory application programs as an extension of the descriptive model.

1.3 Outline of the Text

The text of this book is divided into four parts. Part A, Development and Structure of the Monitoring System (Chapters 1 to 3), deals with the problem analysis and the objectives of the study. The development of methods for description, data storage in an information system and of models for prediction are described. Relevant literature is briefly reviewed in introductory paragraphs. This literature survey has been limited to a discussion of the techniques included in the information system; it is not intended to give an exhaustive review of the literature on forest succession.

Part B, Data Processing (Chapters 4 to 6), deals with a description of the basic tree model (Chapter 4), whereas in Chapters 5 to 8, different tools for modelling using the information system data are described.

Part C, Examples of System Application (Chapters 7 to 11), demonstrates the monitoring system at work in some forest objects under study, using the tools described in Part B. Chapters 7 and 8 deal with reconstruction of long-term or cyclic and non-cyclic forest dynamics by means of tree ring analysis, traces of uprooting and interpretation of the present forest structure. Preliminary results of forest monitoring in some selected objects under study are discussed in Chapter 9. In Chapter 10 a number of variables is studied across the objects under study. Chapter eleven deals with the results of simulations of light throughfall and their use to explain forest structure and dynamics.

Part D, The Potential of SILVI-STAR (Chapters 12 and 13), gives examples of the use of the monitoring system as a tool in forest management. In Chapter 12, the monitoring system as a tool for management practice and science is discussed, in Chapter 13, the scope of improvement and further development of the system.

Design of the System

In 1980, a long-term ecological monitoring project was initiated to study development processes in forests under natural conditions (Koop 1982, 1984, 1986b, 1988). It aimed at building up an ecological information system for forest management, with special emphasis on its applicability for nature conservation purposes. Broader applicability of the system has been considered from the beginning, e.g. in the Netherlands for multi-purpose and production forestry, by incorporating spontaneous processes in the management systems. Three phases in the development of the project can be distinguished: the first concerns the working out of appropriate techniques for data collection in the field; the second the organization of data storage and retrieval; and third, data processing and interpretation. Collected data were planned to be used also for validation of predictive models of forest development.

2.1 Phase 1: Working Out Appropriate Techniques for Data Collection

Against the background of the problem analyses and objectives of the study, the spatial arrangement of individual trees and its effect upon gap regeneration and herbaceous layer development should be the main subject for monitoring and modelling. On a higher scale level, patterns in tree species' distribution and developmental phase should be studied.

Partially on the basis of earlier experience (Koop 1981), a system was worked out from already existing techniques for the analysis of structure and species composition of natural and semi-natural forests: (1) remote sensing, (2) forest profile analysis, (3) methods of forest inventory used in natural forest reserves in Central Europe, (4) permanent quadrat survey in combination with vegetation mapping and (5) ground photography.

2.1.1 Reflections on Plot Size and Frequency of Measurements

Processes in the forest take place at different scale levels in space and time. Changes in time vary from seasonal fluctuations to changes that can be observed and measured only after years, decades or even longer periods. The frequency of observation should be adapted to allow the study of these processes. Events such as the death of trees, windthrows and tree breaks are measurable over short periods. Soil disturbance by uprooting and changes in the herbaceous vegetation closely related to such abrupt changes in the forest canopy should be measured at the same intervals. For continuous,

gradual processes, such as tree growth, the methods of measurement must be attuned to the precision needed to solve the stated problem. The desired interval between measurements can be determined by comparing an estimate of the rate of change and the precision that can be reached by a certain method for the variable to be measured.

Changes in patterns of plants of different size take place at spatially different scale levels. The information system concerned with complex forest-ecosystem behaviour at different scales in time and space to collect data for pattern analysis should focus on areas of different size at different frequencies. Techniques for data collection should therefore be organized in a hierarchical system concept.

The hierarchy theory (Simon 1962) is concerned with systems that have a certain type of hierarchically organized complexity. Such systems can be divided into discrete functional systems or subsystems, operating at different scales. A set of subsystems together can explain the functioning of a system at a higher integration level. One fundamental consequence of hierarchical structure is that non-equilibrium dynamics or spatial heterogeneity at one scale is incorporated into higher level behaviour, where it can be translated into equilibrium or constancy (O'Neil et al. 1986). For example, at a higher level, disturbance frequency can be considered as a constraint that governs an equilibrium species assemblage (Allen and Starr 1982). Urban et al. (1987) recapitulate that a hierarchical perspective would emphasize three strategic concerns in an analysis of landscape pattern:

1. detect pattern and define its spatial and temporal scale at a specific level;
2. infer which factors generate pattern, whether they be demographic processes, environmental constraints, disturbances or a combination of these;
3. relate this pattern to adjacent levels.

According to this theory, Delcourt et al. (1983), Urban et al. (1987) and Falinski (1988) arranged different disturbance regimes, forest processes, environmental constraints and vegetation patterns. They differ in their spatial and temporal extent in logarithmic scaled space-time domains (Fig.2.1). The use of hierarchically organized subsystems implies hierarchical interactions.

This allows causal explanations by explaining patterns and processes on a certain scale by patterns and processes at a lower hierarchical level. For the individual subsystems, the

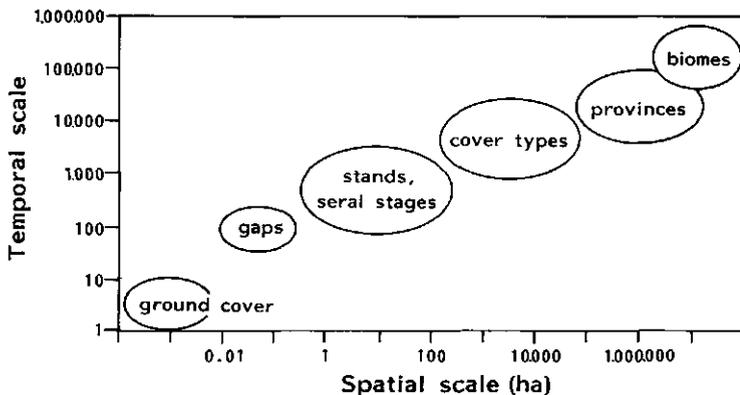


Fig. 2.1. Vegetation patterns, viewed in the context of space-time domains. (After Delcourt et al. 1983)

quantity of data will be less numerous and need not be numerical. Statistical proof of observed phenomena will be difficult. The use of fewer subsystems and higher quantities of data per level, on the other hand, improves the possibilities for statistical analyses of data; these data have to be numerical (Oldeman 1989). A system state statistically described in terms of means and standard errors (Husch 1971) at two moments quantifies a shift. The process responsible for the shift cannot be explained, because hierarchical levels in such an approach are lacking. The number of levels distinguished and their delimitations can be freely chosen, depending on the requirements of the study concerned.

2.1.2 A Hierarchy for Forest Analysis

The first visible impact of most silvicultural treatment is structural. Forest structure made up by trees can easily be depicted in maps and profile drawings and can thus be made accessible to managers in the field. Therefore the use of structure in hierarchy as the prime criterium would be very suitable for the purpose of this study. Oldeman (1974a, 1978, 1989), studying spatially complex tropical rainforests, developed a hierarchical system, adapted to the dynamic and patchy character of natural forest vegetation. He aimed at giving his hierarchical levels spatial limits. At each level biotic as well as abiotic subsystems can be distinguished. His levels will be discussed below against the objectives and requirements for the information system (Chap. 1).

The Tree Compartment

The space occupied by one single tree during its lifespan is defined by Oldeman (1974b, 1983) as the tree ecotope. Morphological criteria for the observation of trees are integrated into whole tree architecture and growth models, which can be considered as differentiated branching complexes (Hallé et al. 1978). Subsystems of the tree, as proposed by Zimmermann and Brown (1971), Edelin (1977), Hallé et al. (1978) and De Reffye (1979) as organs integrated into differentiated organ complexes, are beyond the scope of this study, considering its objectives (Chap. 1).

The Regeneration Unit

Oldeman (1983, 1989) defines the regeneration unit or eco-unit as: "every surface on which at one moment in time a vegetation development has begun, of which the architecture, ecophysiological functioning and species composition are ordained by one set of trees until the end". According to Knapp (1974), regeneration unit development can be treated as a cyclic subprocess in "succession". The regeneration unit level fits the scale of management interventions of cutting and thinning, where by manipulation the interaction between trees and the surrounding stand and the interaction with spontaneous regeneration of trees and herbaceous species are being influenced.

The Non-Woody Compartment

For two reasons there is the need to distinguish, besides a woody, a non-woody compartment of the regeneration unit.

1. Soil disturbances by uprooting of trees, decaying tree stems and sun flecks cause heterogeneity in the forest floor vegetation pattern within the regeneration unit.
2. The occurrence of mostly non-woody life forms may be highly determined by trees. The replacement of the trees thus automatically entails the death of the forest regeneration unit as a whole, and its replacement by one or more other units. But

patches of herbs or lianas in the new unit may also determine the establishment and growth of trees. Therefore in terms of hierarchy, a subsystem of non-woody species of equivalent hierarchical position as the tree is needed.

According to the concept of *synusia* (Barkman 1973), groups of plant populations can be distinguished that belong to one life form or are separated from other populations in time or space or by a fundamentally deviant use of the site. This concept covers the need expressed above and can be added to Oldeman's hierarchy.

The Mosaic of Regeneration Units: the Sylvatic Mosaic

A set of regeneration units, often but not always of different ages, builds a forest mosaic. Natural forests consist of a continuously shifting mosaic of regeneration units. Because the term forest mosaic was already used in other models in a deviant way, e.g. landscape models (Shugart 1984), the term sylvatic unit or sylvatic mosaic was introduced for this particular biotic mosaic (Oldeman 1983, 1989). The sylvatic mosaic is assumed to occur on one homogeneous site type. Mosaics with patterns of different coarseness have been described for various sites (Koop 1981; Korpel 1982). At this hierarchical level, minimum areas of the mosaics of regeneration units have to be estimated. The coarseness of the sylvatic mosaic gives information for transformation management.

The Site Mosaic

At the highest integration level different sylvatic mosaics on different sites can be integrated in a site mosaic. However, site patches, in a fine site mosaic, may be smaller than the sylvatic mosaic area that shows durable proportionality of regeneration unit age classes. In this case the sylvatic mosaic level can be skipped. The interactions between regeneration units of the same site can still be studied if the size and the ratio of surface to boundary length of separate site patches are large enough. To attain the surface of one complete sylvatic mosaic, a number of site patches scattered over the site mosaic have to be lumped together. In the latter case, in sequence of just size hierarchy, the sylvatic mosaic and site mosaic ought to be interchanged, although this is not so in terms of complexity.

The level of the site mosaic is beyond the scope of the study unless this level is interchanged with that of the sylvatic mosaic, as mentioned above. The separate units of the site mosaic, i.e. sites or sylvatic mosaics, are used for the selection criterion for the study areas to be included in the system.

2.1.3 Nested Plot Design

The levels distinguished in the above-described hierarchy correspond very well to the scale levels that are most relevant for management purposes. The regeneration unit, its subsystems (the non-woody and tree compartment) and its supersystem (the sylvatic mosaic) are the hierarchic levels on which the information system has to concentrate. Therefore the scale levels of data collection have to be attuned to the surface area that these hierarchic levels cover in the field.

Minimum Area Needed for the Sylvatic Mosaic

When studied over a sufficiently large area, the sylvatic mosaic proved to show a durable proportionality of age classes of regeneration units. Koop (1981) and Korpel (1982) independently distinguished a minimum area required for the permanent dynamic

canopy gaps. This vertical aspect always causes interactions with neighbouring patches. The scale of disturbance is caused by the death, break or uprooting of a tree. All causes of tree extinction are influenced not only by tree age but also by the structure of the forest itself, e.g. shading and roughness of the canopy and position of a tree in a wind-exposed or sheltered environment. The mechanical aspects of destruction by falling trees are responsible for the scale and pattern of disturbance and regeneration (Oldeman 1974a). Different-sized forest components like trees, shrubs, herbs and mosses stress the need for a hierarchical organized approach.

Starting with complex physiological modules of stand models would not result in the detail required for individual trees and species other than trees. Although growth can be assigned to individual trees and tree species composition can be predicted, gap models like the JABOWA family (Shugart 1984) would also not meet the detail required.

In an iterative simulation model, the casual nature of, for example, trees that in their fall cause damage to other trees, or trees that uproot or rot in the heart and break, make predictions of individual tree growth almost impossible. The aspects of damage caused by the fall of a tree and the light interception of trees in a complex forest structure necessitate three-dimensional modelling. The complex reality of natural forest developments in details of spatial arrangement of trees of different size and shape could not as yet be simulated with existing models.

Therefore not the way of starting with a basic model, that can be elaborated in more detail later on, is chosen. Instead a descriptive model of the complex reality was developed and time series of forest development at different sites were built up. On the basis of the data collected, applicative computer programs were developed to solve specific problems on the way towards a predictive model (Chap. 6).

Because light is the most important competition factor in forests, a model for light throughfall has been developed to find causal relations between occurrence of species and their growth. Relations between light simulation and vegetation composition processing is elaborated, and correlative studies have been carried out to find the relation between tree ring growth and simulated light values. These programs can be seen as a first step towards predicting further forest development.

To enable the link between detailed single-tree ground-truth and aerial photographs, a model to simulate an aerial view with data collected on the ground has been worked out. Because tree growth and forest pattern development exceed the imagination of a human spectator, a program that uses the information stored in tree rings to reconstruct forest development has been developed. This program enables visual interpretation and can be used for demonstration for colleagues and managers in the field.

Data Collection and Data Storage

In the preceding chapter the reasoning behind the decision to adopt a nested plot design with four scale levels of data collection was given. In the present chapter the data collection techniques for the different scale levels (Table 2.1) will be described. The scale levels will be dealt with, starting with the highest level of the forest type area and ending with the herbaceous transect area. How these scale levels fit in the hierarchical system level of the forest site mosaic will be dealt with. Data storage will be discussed.

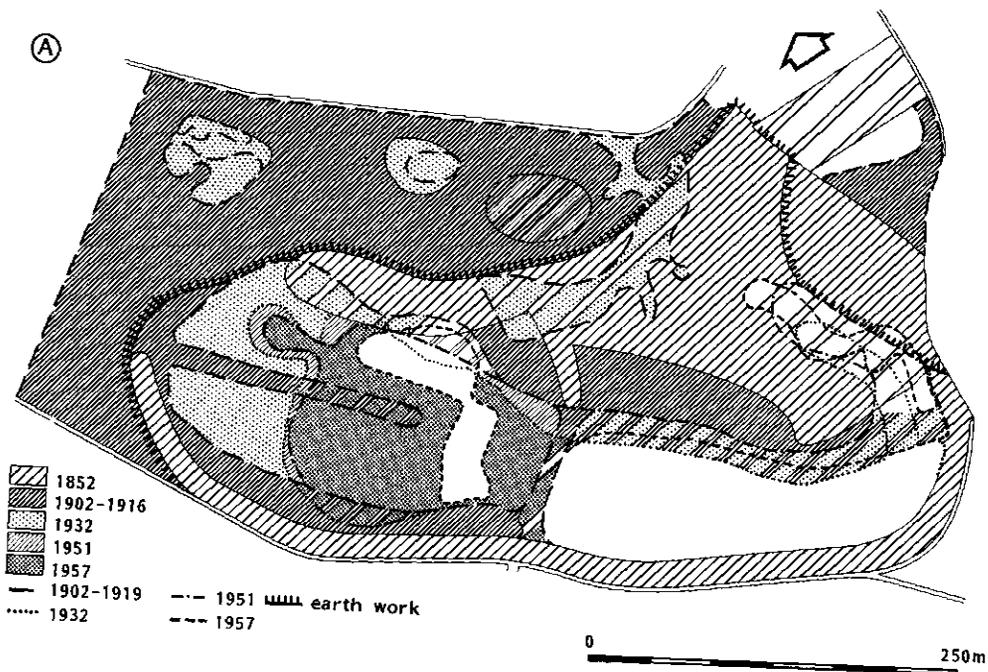
The hierarchical level of the forest site mosaic reaches beyond the nested plot design considered here. Only in the case of a mosaic or complex of small site patches, does the nested plot set up focus on more than one site unit. In all other cases, the site type is the selection criterion for the forest objects to be included in the studies carried out with the information system and the key for extrapolating the results to other forests of the same site type.

Until now, for characterization and classification of the sites, the concept of the PNV (Potential Natural Vegetation) is used. Tüxen (1956) based the concept of PNV on the genesis of actual but secondary vegetation types in man-made landscapes. The author defines the PNV as the species composition that would develop, under present existing abiotic circumstances, without human interference and within a time span over which the vegetation can reach its end state. The PNV concept is a tool for recognition of an actual vegetation type as part of a developmental series. These series are named after their oldest present development stages (Kalkhoven and Van der Werf 1988). This approach helps to obtain a generalized picture from the multitude of actual species combinations, in space and in time (Ellenberg 1978).

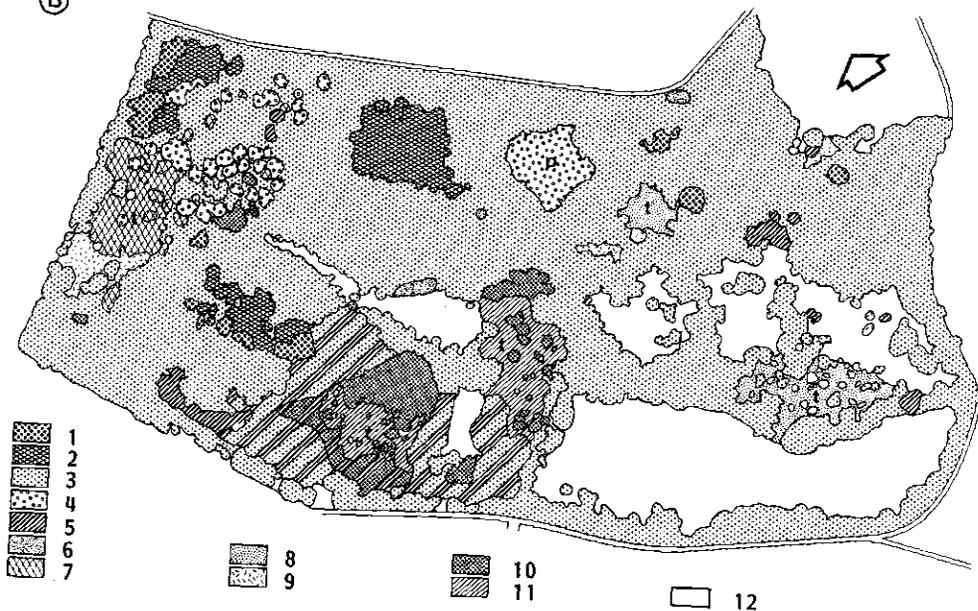
The Potential Natural Vegetation of the Netherlands was mapped by Van der Werf, in Trautmann (1972) for the Dutch-German frontier zone, by Kalkhoven et al. (1976) and Van de Brink and Van der Werf (1977) for the Veluwe region. Nordrhein-Westfalen (FRG) was mapped by Trautmann (1972) and part of Niedersachsen by Krause and Schröder (1979) scale 1:500,000. Géhu (1973) worked on the Potential Natural Vegetation of northern France. The whole of Europe is mapped to scale 1:3000,000 by Noirfalise (1987).

Recently Van der Werf (1989) worked out the classification of potential natural vegetation types for The Netherlands in more detail. Early drafts of this classification were the basis for the selection of forest objects to be included in the monitoring system. For each PNV type of the Netherlands, the forest object closest to the end stage of the PNV was selected. Species composition should be representative for the PNV and as far as possible soil profiles should be undisturbed. Ancient woodlands were preferred unless the PNV is characteristic for younger woodlands. If selection for a PNV within The Netherlands was unsatisfactory, for reference the most natural representative of the PNV was sought abroad. In the Appendix all objects now under study are listed.

A



B



3.1 Forest Type Area

The level of one forest type covers one sylvatic mosaic with its characteristic mosaic of regeneration units. At the area, covering at least one "minimum structure area", the scale of regeneration of one forest type can be studied. To monitor vegetation pattern changes at the scale level of the sylvatic unit, an area of 10 to 40 ha around the core area is mapped from large-scale aerial photographs (1:4000 to 1:8000). The spatial patterns of vegetation composition and vegetation structure are recorded every 10 years. Aerial photographs in true colour, colour infrared, or both, are digitized by means of a video camera or scanner, and image files are kept on tapes. Besides digital storage, visual photo interpretations, such as vegetation maps and forest structure maps, are kept on shrink-proof tracing sheets and stored in the same way as the chartings of the core area.

3.1.1 Mapping of Forest History

Information on forest history can be gathered from old maps. In The Netherlands a regular ordnance survey 1:50,000 and later 1:25,000 has been carried out since 1850, covering the entire country (Van der Linden 1973). Older maps originating from the military engineers' archives date back to the second half of the eighteenth century. They do not cover the entire country and their reliability varies (Koeman 1963). The first land registry maps in the period 1824 to 1848 are very interesting. On these maps, all cadastral units are charted at scale 1:5000. Landownership and use are registered. In fact, these maps were used as a basis for the first ordnance survey map. A useful source of information for more recent history is aerial photography. Written documents in the form of articles, books, etc., but also information from archives and personal communication from local people may help to solve questions about former local land use. Rackham (1976, 1980) and Peterken and Jones (1987) mapped ancient woodlands by collating historical information sources with mapping of earthworks that mark former woodland boundaries.

In the developed monitoring system, a forest history map is made at scale 1:2500. Earthworks are mapped and the age of the woodlands is mapped as reconstructed from old maps and written documents (Fig. 3.1a).

←

Fig. 3.1.A Example of forest history mapping of the forest type area of the Weenderbos (province Groningen, The Netherlands). B Example of forest structure mapping of the forest type area of the Weenderbos. The bigger part of the reserve is covered by an old tree phase (height > 20 m) in which tree species are distinguished. Letters *p* and *t* indicate pole tree phases (height < 20 m) and thicket phases (height < 10 m). 1 *Fagus sylvatica*, 2 *Quercus rubra*, 3 *Quercus robur*, 4 *Fraxinus excelsior*, 5 *Betula pubescens*, 6 *Populus tremula*, 7 *Acer pseudoplatanus*, 8 *Corylus avellana*, 9 *Sorbus aucuparia*, 10 *Alnus glutinosa*, 11 *Salix cinerea*, 12 open treeless area

Some major vegetation shifts can be identified, although the legends of both maps are not identical. The content of the old legend was documented with 18 vegetation plots, accurately indicated on the map. In 1985 these plots were reassessed.

3.2 Core Area

The core area covers at least some regeneration units. At this scale level the interior organization of the regeneration units is described in terms of their subsystems, the woody and non-woody compartments. Trees are charted, individually measured and classified on the basis of quantitative values for the different variables. The pattern in the non-woody compartment is mapped.

To allow explanation of the effects of trees upon the herbaceous vegetation in the herbaceous transect area, information on forest structure over a surface ranging at least one maximum tree-height around the herbaceous transect area is required. In the case of tree heights between 20 and 30 m, the core area therefore measures 70 x 140 m (0.98 ha). In the case of forests with tree heights less than 20 m the core area width can be reduced to 50 m, with a length of 140 m, resulting in an area of 0.7 ha.

Values of variables, collected in the core area for trees with a Dbh more than 5 cm, can be divided into variables related to forest structure (tree chartings), quantitative tree measures and estimated tree classifications. In addition, the core area is documented with sequential ground photography and its forest floor vegetation is described by mapping. Trees and shrubs with Dbh less than 5 cm are assessed in the herbaceous transect area.

3.2.1 Tree Charting

Regeneration units and stand structure have been studied by many authors with the help of profile and ground-plan drawings. Especially when dealing with complex forest structures of selection forests, scientists have used methods of profile drawing, e.g. Blomqvist (1879), Ammon (1937) and Knüchel (1944). For the purpose of transfer of knowledge on selection or for thinning, the method was used by Köstler (1953), Koop (1981) and De Graaf (1986). Oldeman and Schmidt (1986) use it for silvicultural design, for the time being, for educational purposes only. The profile drawing method has also frequently been used for the description of virgin forests or spontaneous forest development, e.g. by Watt (1923), Fröhlich (1930), Mauve (1931), Davis and Richards (1933), Leibundgut (1945), Mayer-Wegelin et al. (1952), Richards (1952), Oldeman (1972, 1974a/b), Whitmore (1975), Hallé et al. (1978), Lamprecht (1980) and Koop (1981). Rollet (1974) and Oldeman (1974a/b, 1989) give many examples of transect drawings.

Forests are too complex for all properties to be predicted, and every method of transect drawing is therefore an abstraction, adapted to the question asked (Oldeman 1986). Line and strip transects have their restrictions in being representative for a larger surface area and efforts have been made to obtain a more spatial three-dimensional image of forest structure. N. Hallé, who illustrated an article by Aubréville (1965), tried to depict forest structure by means of three-dimensional block diagrams. Although Hallé drew all African forest types, Richards (1983) holds the method useful only for relatively

open forests such as savannah forest. The images give an overall characterization of forest structure. Because of obstruction by too many trees, their information cannot be compared with the details of forest structure that can be depicted in a transect of appropriate width. Some authors drew adjacent transects (Schauer and Stöcker 1976; Mayer and Neumann 1981). As has been emphasized by Rollet (1974), the representativity of one single transect for the total of the forest structure of a stand is low.

Extensive chartings of stem base positions and dead wood on maps of areas up to 1 ha were made by Watt (1923), Markgraf and Dengler (1931) and Falinski (1977). Genssler (1979), Lamprecht (1980) and Bücking et al. (1985) describe the so-called 1 ha "Kernfläche" charted in natural forest research projects in several states of the F.R.G. Prusa (1985) published maps of all trees with a diameter at breast height exceeding 10 cm over entire forest reserves with sizes of up to tens of hectares. In Baden-Württemberg besides the core area, circle plots of 40 m diameter in a 1 ha grid over the whole forest reserve are mapped (Bücking et al. 1986). Bouchon et al. (1973) drew maps of crown projections only, over an area of 35 ha in France. The crown projections were assigned to and distinguished after different diameter classes of the tree bole. Ohsawa (1981), Nakashizuka and Numata (1982), Nakashizuka (1985), Naka (1982), Leemans (1986) and Torquebiau (1985) charted tree base positions, dead wood and crown projections.

Only few authors charted microrelief due to uprooting. Sometimes the position of lying dead wood is drawn. Uprooting is a common forest process. Many authors reported on it, especially in regions with remnants of virgin forests or where original forest floor micro-relief had not been levelled (Lutz 1940; Stephens 1956; Armson and Fessenden 1973; Stone 1975; Brown 1976; Koop 1981; Beatty 1981). Brewer and Merritt (1978) and Hutnik (1952), Lyford and Maclean (1966) and Putz (1983) reported on the influence of uprootings upon tree distribution. Londo (1977), Beatty (1981) and Koop (1981) described the influence on species composition in the herb layer. Oliver and Stephens (1977) and Zeide (1981) describe methods of mound dating by research on trees that grow on them.

Henry and Swan (1974) used the information provided by the position and state of decay of dead wood for reconstructing the history of a forest on a restricted area. Falinski (1977, 1986) showed that repeated charting of dead wood can be useful in detailed studies on dead wood dynamics. Mortality, translocation and decomposition of wood, as an important part of the forest ecosystem flow of organic material, has been studied by Falinski (1977) and Sollins (1982). Yoneda (1975) described properties of decaying wood.

Brown (1974) and Martin (1976) describe line intersect methods for the quantitative inventory of fallen woody material. The method can be used to estimate biomass over large areas.

In the monitoring system, positions of tree bases of dead and living trees as well as those of the stumps and uprootings are charted every 10 years. Abrupt changes such as tree uprootings and breaks are charted every 3 years, simultaneously with the herbaceous transect area description. Crown projections are drawn with the help of imaginary vertical planes that touch the crown. A sketch of the intersecting lines of these imaginary planes with the ground plane providing a polygon in which the crown projection fits (Fig. 3.3). Devices such as the "Cajanus tube" enable an exact vertical view angle for assessment of the crown projection. Such devices may be used successfully in open forest stands. Touching or overlapping tree crowns can only be distinguished separately with great difficulty. In these cases the unaided eye, that can judge distances and relative positions, is the best to assess the limits of crowns. Crown projections of all trees, with their tree base within the core area, are completely drawn, within as well as outside the core area limits. For identification all trees are numbered on the maps.

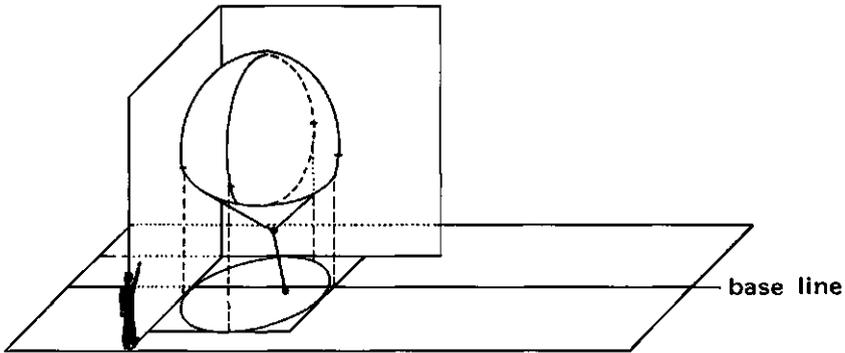


Figure 3.3. Crown projections can be drawn using imaginary vertical planes that touch the tree crown. The lines of intersection with the ground surface make up a polygon in which is wrapped the crown projection to be drawn. The vertical planes can best be imagined parallel to and at right angles with the base line of the transect respectively

The hand-drawn chart of the core area serves as the first control in checking for mistakes. For three-dimensional model processing (see Chap. 4.3) only measurements of the x- and y-co-ordinates of tree base and crown extremities are necessary. Notes on standard forms of these measurements, without the visual check of a tree drawing, facilitates mistakes, e.g. in the sequence of tree co-ordinates or in interchanging of tree numbers (Schulting and Staaveren 1981). Direct input of field-measured co-ordinate values in a hand-held computer, with an automatic check for impossible combinations and a visual check provided by a small graphical display of the on-going charting on the computer screen (Fig. 3.4), has proved to be an acceptable alternative for drawing (see Appendix). Mistakes and confusion about tree numbers can be excluded by a built-in error tracer, while there is also the possibility of direct correction in the field.

The tree positions, crown projections, positions of fallen dead trees and uprootings, drawn to scale 1:200 on millimeter paper sheets in the field, are transferred in ink upon shrink-proof tracing sheets. Copies of the sheets with only the tree positions are used to make a tree number chart, a tree species chart and a blank tree position chart to be used when the plot is to be charted again. These charts and two duplicates are safely stored in separate places. The complete chart with information on tree positions and crown projections is superimposed on the tree number chart and put on a digitizer tablet. For sequential tree numbers, the tree base and peripheral points of the crown, necessary for three-dimensional data processing (see Chap. 4.3), are digitized with the help of the computer program DIGIT (see Appendix). This program enables automatic number increment and easy program jumps for correction of arbitrary tree numbers.

In a drawing, without loss of time, supplementary information is automatically included. This information is lost if field-data on forest structure are collected only with a hand-held computer. However, for the extensive core area charting, this loss balances the gain of time for working out the field drawing, transferring it to tracing sheets, followed by digitizing the co-ordinates. In addition, besides computerized inventory, part of the core area in the woody transect area is drawn by hand.



Fig. 3.4. Hand-held computer for the input in the field of forest structure measurements. **A** A small graphical display provides a visual check of the on-going charting. **B** A tree caliper can be connected for tree diameter measurements. **C** A tree altimeter can be connected for tree height measurements.

3.2.2 Tree Measurements

Figure 3.5 shows all height measurements for a tree. Moreover, diameter is measured at breast height (Dbh). Heights are measured for the crown top (Ht), the greatest width of the crown or the periphery height (Hp), the crown base (Hc), the first living fork (Hf), and the relative height of the tree base to a reference height (HB). In the case of bent stems or where stems overtop a partly dead tree crown, and when the

height of the top of the living tree crown (H_t) is less than the stem length, the length of the stem is recorded.

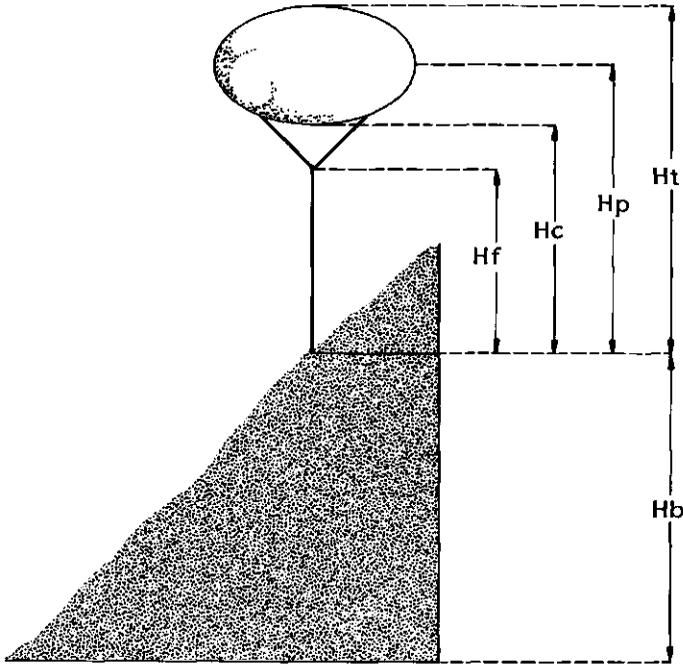
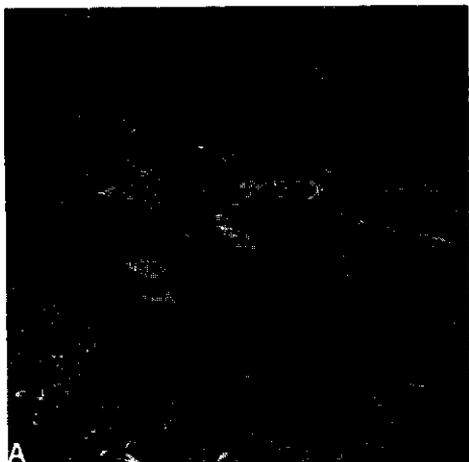


Fig. 3.5. Height measurements on a tree, H_t (top height), H_p (height of the greatest width of the crown the periphery), H_c (height of the crown base), H_f (height of the first living fork), H_b (height of the tree base to a reference height).

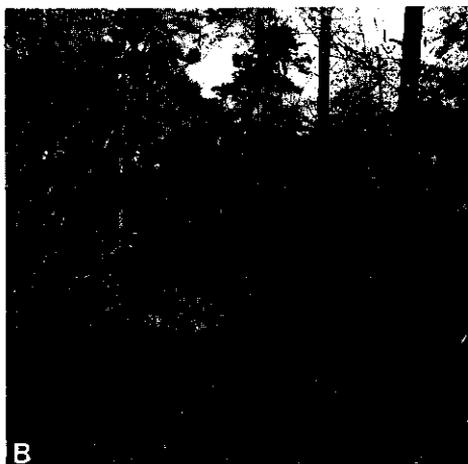
3.2.3 Tree Classifications

In the already mentioned 1 ha "Kernfläche" of the natural forest research projects in several states of the F.R.G. (Genssler 1979; Lamprecht 1980 and Bücking et al. 1985) besides charting individual trees, often individual trees have been measured and classified according to Leibundgut (1959, 1982) and Mayer (1976).

Fig. 3.6. Photographs of dead wood in different stages of decay. A Fresh fallen tree with intact bark (class 1). B Tree with decayed bark (class 2). C Superficial decayed tree with soft wood that can easily be squashed up to a few centimeters (class 3). D Thoroughly decayed wood, that has lost its consistency. E Remains of the mouldered tree are to be found in the litter layer and very often indicated by *Oxalis acetosella*



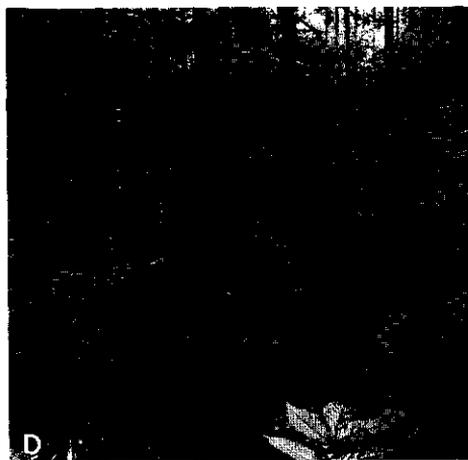
A



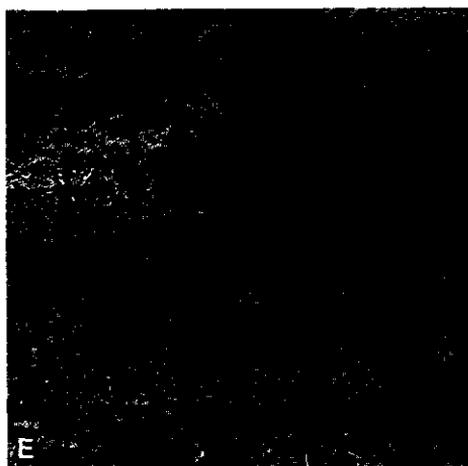
B



C



D



E

Oldeman (1974a) uses architectural codes for separate trees, that indicate the so-called potential trees, trees of the present and trees of the past. According to Hallé et al. (1978), trees of the present are trees that lack potential for further crown expansion. They exist at a quasi-stationary height, without adding to this dimension or to the width of their crowns. Trees of the present generally determine or dominate the architecture of the forest they live in. They can do so during long periods, provided the forest is not subject to frequent and violent total destruction (e.g. by hurricanes). No further "promotion" to a "higher" rank is possible. In contrast, a potential tree (formerly called "tree of the future" and later renamed to prevent confusion with an existing forestry term) is a tree that either is in a phase of vigorous expansion, or suppressed and waiting for conditions which will promote resumed growth. These trees still have a potential for future expansion. Trees of the past are trees that are damaged beyond repair so that there is no potential for future development, nor a possibility of survival in a stationary state. Such growth potential estimates of forest trees are often included in the transect by drawing trees in different line symbols. In this way the dynamics (past, present and future) of the forest plot are indicated. In the monitoring system, the trees are classified in the field as to their species, architectural code according to Oldeman (1974a), vitality, and cause and intensity of damage (Leibundgut 1959, 1982; Mayer 1976).

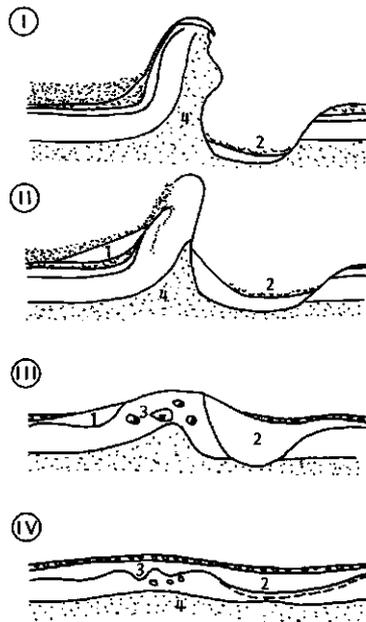


Fig. 3.7. The process of flattening of the microrelief due to uprooting of a tree can be divided into four stages (Roman numerals) after Koop (1981). 1 Soil material formerly situated above the main root layer. 2 Soil material formerly situated underneath the main root layer, intermingled with organic material having accumulated in the pit. 3 Loose soil mass with mouldered roots and many cavities. 4 Deeper uplifted soil layer

The cover of the crown within its projection is estimated for the individual trees with the decimal scale as published by Doing-Kraft (1954) and Londo (1984) (see Appendix). The position and stage of decay of dead wood is recorded as shown in Figure 3.6. Stage of flattening of microrelief caused by uprooting, the height of the mound and depth of the pit are noted according to Koop (1981) (Fig. 3.7).

A photocopy of the hand-drawn tree number chart or, in the case of computerized co-ordinate input in the field, a computer-plotted tree number chart (Chap. 6) is taken to the field for reference to take measurements per tree. The measures and classifications are entered on standard forms or again directly entered in the hand-held computer.

The data on the standard forms and the digitized plan are loaded in the computer database with help of the program ORACLIN (see Appendix). The combinations of data from the standard forms and the digitized plans are first checked for errors or impossible combinations for each tree number with the program CORRECT (see Appendix). Examples of the last categories are: missing (i.e. not digitized) crown projections of live or dead trees that do have a tree crown projection. The sequence of digitized peripheral points is checked and for a visual check forest structure is plotted (Chap. 6). Data collected with the hand-held computer are already corrected in the field and can be loaded directly.

3.2.4 Tree Ring Sampling

For the core area, or a central part of it, tree ring samples are collected for all trees exceeding a Dbh of 10 cm. These trees are sampled twice at breast height with a 40-cm Pressler borer in opposite directions where the diameter is the same as the mean diameter deducted from girth measurement. The samples are stored in tubes filled with a 1:2 solution of glycerin and methylated spirit. The bore holes in the trees are coped with a disinfectant paste (Kopinga 1979). Tree ring samples are measured with a linear digitizer (Van der Beek and Maessen 1981). Tree rings hit askew, for example near the core of the tree, were repositioned at right angles with the tree ring. The values of cumulative tree ring width are directly written in the files. The program CORRING (see Appendix) plots tree ring width of several trees on the screen or sends it to the printer. To achieve absolute dating of tree growth the thus printed dips and tops in the sequence of tree rings of individual trees have to be collated and related to the sequences of years of documented extreme weather conditions, e.g. dry summers, cold springs or years with heavy storms (Fritts 1976). Between two dated tree rings the number of tree rings has to be fitted. Input errors can be traced, and possibly misinterpreted tree rings, which were marked during counting, have to be divided extra or lumped together. From the two samples of each tree, mean values of annual tree ring width are computed.

3.2.5 Sequential Ground Photography

Drawings are analytical abstractions. Photographs cannot replace profile drawings, tree charts or vegetation maps. During drawing, scaling is used more or less consciously for depiction. Details at lower integration levels are left out, for example the tree crown is drawn as a transparent body without leaves. A ground photograph always contains noise and information which is of less importance, e.g. it suffers from obstruction caused by nearby trees or shrubs.

Aerial photographs do not show the lower tree crowns, hidden by higher canopy trees. Thalen (1980) reviewed the possibilities of the use of repeated aerial photography and sequential ground photography in permanent plot studies in a variety of vegetation types. He concluded that the combination of conventional aerial photography (vertical stereo at scales 1:5000 to 1:50,000), large-scale 70 mm photography (stereo, colour or colour infrared at scales 1:500 to 1:5000) and ground photography together with permanent plots seems to be the most promising approach. Bücking (1986) reported on a method of sequential ground photography in combination with permanent sample plots. About 16 partly overlapping photographs ($f = 50$ mm), covering a view angle of 360° , are taken from one point in the center of a sample plot. De Graaf (1986) used stereo pairs as a document for depicting selective silviculture in tropical rainforest in Surinam. The problem of sequential photography at marked camera points is that the previously chosen view angle may become obstructed during vegetation development or the camera point may become unattainable or lost.

In the monitoring system at fixed and marked camera points in the core area, every 5 or 10 years, depending on the rate of change of the particular forest vegetation, black and white photographs (negatives 60×60 mm) and colour-slides (24×36 mm) are taken. A 28-mm wide-angle lens is used and camera-stand height is 1.75 m. At a certain point two overlapping view angles are chosen, one obliquely downward to record the ground vegetation and one obliquely upward for the forest tree structure. The position and viewing angle of a camera point is drawn on the 1:200 maps of the core area (Fig. 3.8). Camerapoints are marked on the tree chart of the woody transect area and core area. The points are digitized in x and y values and stored in the database together with the name of the author, date, serial number of the camerapoint and record number of

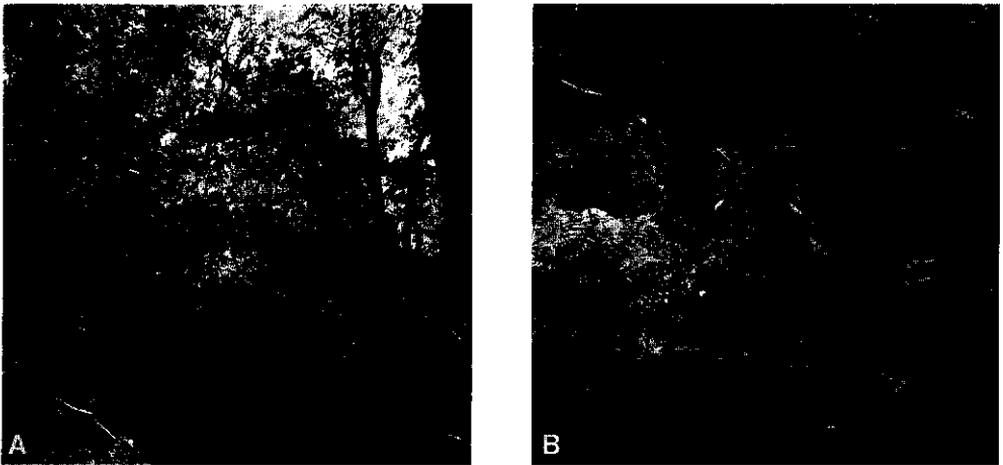


Fig. 3.8. Example of ground photography with two overlapping view angles. **A** One obliquely upward to record forest structure. **B** One obliquely downward for ground vegetation in the Otterskooi (province Overijssel, The Netherlands)

the black and white negative and colour slide. Prints of the black and white photographs together with the colour slides are kept separately from the black and white negatives. Black and white negatives can be kept longer without quality loss than colour slides. Therefore when for some reason only a set of colour slides is available, black and white reproductions are made.

3.2.6 Vegetation Mapping

A main restriction in a considerable number of cases of transect analysis and tree charting is that only trees of a diameter at breast height over a certain limit are shown. No other forest components are incorporated, except for large lianas or tall herbs that can be depicted at the scale used. Sometimes a complete inventory or results of sampling of smaller species, that cannot be depicted, is added. Examples of combined inventory of complete species composition in adjacent plots and transect analyses are given by Walter (1979), Bachacou and Chessel (1979), Barthélemy (1979) and Koop (1981). Londo (1971, 1978) discussed the role of repeated vegetation mapping in addition to permanent plot survey to obtain maximum information on the relation between structure and dynamics of vegetation types. Remapping can detect shifts in vegetation pattern, but changes in the vegetation composition are only detectable through detailed inventories of repeated series of relatively small permanent plots, chosen preferably in a grid or in transects in gradient situations to represent various aspects of the vegetation pattern, mapped over a large area.

In the monitoring system a detailed vegetation map of the core area is made at a scale of 1:200. Vegetation units that can be easily seen by virtue of distinct characteristics are distinguished in the field. Depending on the variation of the species composition in the core area, differences between these vegetation units may vary. Such units can be characterized by a clearly different vegetation structure or dominance of one or a few species. Only in exceptional cases have these vegetation units a completely different species composition at the level of a different site. A legend for characterization of the mapped vegetation units is established by processing species composition of the herbaceous transect plots with cluster techniques (Hill 1979a,b; Jongman et al. 1987), and when necessary with final classification by hand. In case mapped vegetation units are not represented in the herbaceous transect plots, additional 10 x 10 m samples or smaller vegetation plots are assessed and used for the classification as well. These extra samples are fixed on the core area map with tree base positions, to be retraceable for repeated description. The vegetation mapping helps to generalize conclusions on vegetation development as observed in permanent quadrats. On the other hand, the 1:200 map gives more depth to the information content of the 1:2500 vegetation map.

An example of both vegetation maps is presented in Figure 3.9. The overall sequence of vegetation types on the large-scale map 1:200 corresponds with the small-scale map 1:2500. Because of the large scale (1:200) of the vegetation map of the core area, pure legend units could be shown. There was no need to distinguish and include at this scale (legend) units made up of complexes of more than one vegetation type. In fact, some extra variants of the vegetation types described for the whole reserve could be distinguished and their distribution could be mapped in more detail. On the other hand, some of the vegetation types are found within the core area in a form poorer in species. From the northeast to the southwest the core area is divided into the *Phragmites* variant of the *Dryopteris* type, the typical variant of the *Dryopteris* type and the *Impatiens* type.

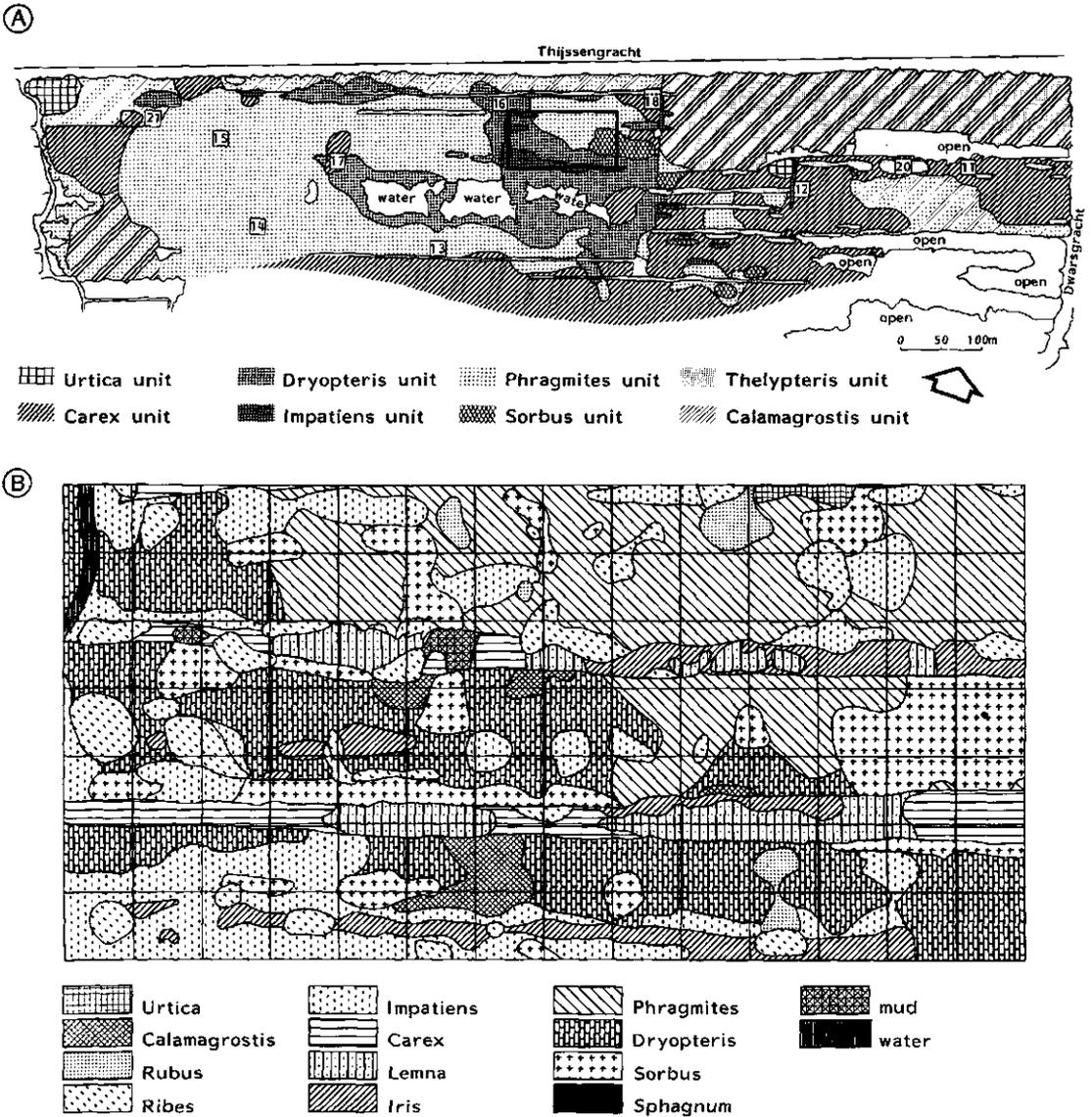


Fig. 3.9. A Vegetation map of the forest site area scale 1:2500 and B of the core area scale 1:200 of the Otterskooi (province Overijssel, The Netherlands). B indicated in A

Many small isolated patches of the *Sorbus* type are found on the highest parts and on the higher edges of the ditches that originate from the spoil dredged from the ditches. Scattered small patches of the *Impatiens* type are found in depressions within all vegetation types. This large-scale vegetation map illustrates adequately the nature of the legend units of the small-scale map. All vegetation legend units of the small-scale map are clearly shown to be vegetation complexes of more than one type in a fine mosaic mainly caused by relief of the pools and ditches of peat cutting (Table 3.2).

Table 3.2. Distribution of the vegetation types (horizontally) over the legend units (vertically) of the 1:2500 vegetation map of the Otterskooi (see Chap. 8). Dominant or co-dominant types are marked with an asterix (*) and subordinated types with the plus sign (+)

	<i>Sorbus</i>	<i>Dryopt.</i>	<i>Phrag.</i>	<i>Calmag.</i>	<i>Carex</i>	<i>Impat.</i>	<i>Thelyp</i>
<i>Sorbus</i>	*						
<i>Dryopteris</i>	+	*				+	
<i>Phragmites</i>	+	+	*	+	+	+	
<i>Calamagrostis</i>	+		*	*		+	
<i>Carex</i>					*	+	
<i>Impatiens</i>						*	
<i>Thelypteris</i>						+	*
<i>Thelypteris/Carex</i>		+		*	+	*	

3.3 Woody Transect Area

For the study of subsystems constituting the "skeleton" of a regeneration unit, i.e. the component trees, a metric standard plot size is chosen, large enough to allow analysis of at least one regeneration unit within its borderlines.

3.3.1 Profile Drawings

For delimitation of the trees to be included in the transect, the line transect method (Oldeman 1980; De Coo 1981) is used besides the strip transect method. In line transects all trees are drawn with a crown of which the projection intersects or touches the midline of the transect. The advantage of this method is that, to keep the drawing readable, no attention has to be paid to an appropriate transect width, whether traversing a dense or an open vegetation. On the other hand, however, no translation of densities to surface area can be made. The method can be used for selecting transect intervals in an "objective" manner for more detailed analyses.

In a strip transect all trees that have their tree base within the borderlines of a rectangular strip are drawn. The optimal width of the strip transect depends on stand density, in the way that optimal thickness of the microtome slices depends on the nature and size of the cells in a tissue. According to Oldeman (1980), in general a width

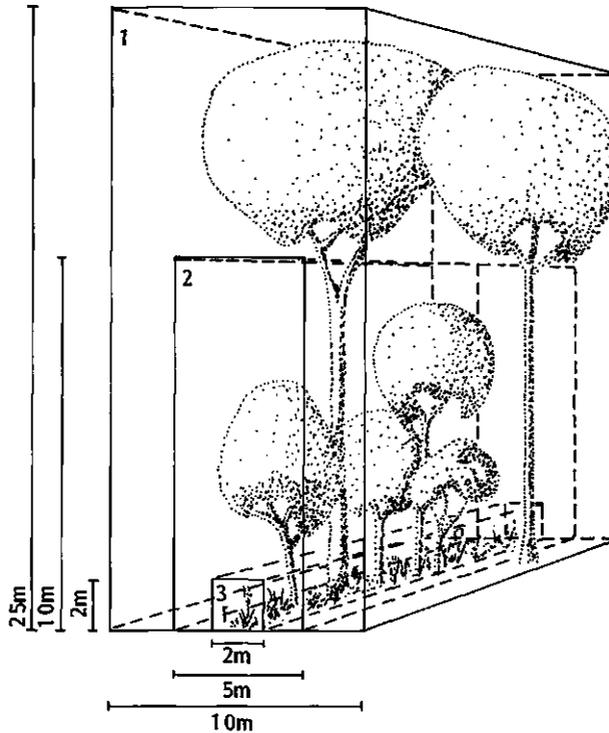


Fig. 3.10. Procedure of transect drawing according to Koop (1981). In order to keep a side view readable, trees of decreasing size must be depicted in proportionally narrower strips (2, 3) within the woody transect area (1) in which the highest trees are drawn

between one half and one third of the tree height gives the best results. To preclude that profile drawings with dense shrub layers, drawn over the total width of the transect plan, become unreadable, tall trees can be drawn in a wider transect than lower trees and shrubs. Some authors leave parts of the crowns, obscured by other trees' crowns in front, out of the profile drawing. Others draw all trees in a schematic transparent style, which has the advantage over photography or the more "realistic" style of drawing of an unobstructed transparent slice of forest structure. For reasons of readability, tree stems obscured by other stems in front are moved half a metre in the drawing. The real position of the tree base can be found in the ground plan. In the legend, attention has to be drawn to this deviation. Sometimes trees outside the transect that have an impact on the transect structure are drawn as well. Koop (1981) also drew tree crowns bordering canopy gaps that were traversed by the transect. If a transect ground plan is added it gives additional information, e.g. on the extension and orientation of gaps that might pass oblique radiation into the transect.

A ground plan of the profile strip is not always drawn as, according to Richards (1983), it ought to be done. Often the width of the strip transect is not stated. When the plan is drawn, some authors draw only the positions of the tree base. If the crown projection is added, the perimeter may be drawn only within the boundaries of the transect (Oldeman 1974a) or the complete crown projections of all trees that have their

stem within the transect are depicted. In the latter case, crown surface for an individual tree can be derived.

The scale used and detail shown in the architecture of trees and other forest components depends on the aim of the transect study. When the architecture of the individual tree or the detailed structure of a stand at regeneration unit level is to be studied, larger scales for a restricted area of some 100 m² are used and ample attention should be paid to branching pattern, windings and remnants of previous forks on the trunk. Oldeman (1980) for this purpose makes separate sketches of each tree in the field, which later on the desk are collated with the help of positions of the tree bases. At the crown periphery inherited reiterative patterns of tree growth are included consciously in lieu of the reality that might have been seen in the field (Oldeman 1974a). When less detail on an individual tree is needed, profiles can be drawn on a smaller scale. All trees can be drawn to scale, both in profile and in vertical projection, on one piece of paper (Koop 1981). This method has the advantage of immediate control in the field of the relative positions of the tree crowns. A possibility to split the transect into two parallel transects of half-width leaves more room for detail in both separate profile drawings (Van de Winckel 1980). When transects are made for floristic or physiognomic purposes or for the study of the forest mosaic as a whole (sylvatic unit level), a small scale is used, and trees are drawn schematically. Crown circumferences are drawn by Whitmore (1975) and Brünig (1977), without an indication of branching patterns or architectural code. Among others, Mayer et al. (1979), Zukrigl (1970) and Korpel (1982) use formalized images for different tree species and pay little attention to variation in individual branching pattern. This style mainly developed in the central European mountainous fir-spruce-beech forests. Information on how the transects were drawn, what points were measured and what was sketched or estimated here is often lacking.

In the monitoring system the tree layer of a permanent transect measuring 10 x 100 m is characterized, in sufficient detail to describe tree shape, with profile drawings and crown projections at scale 1:200 at 10 year intervals. To keep profile drawings readable, lower and denser vegetation strata of the forest are drawn for a narrower strip within the 10 x 100 m transect (Fig. 3.10). Heights over 10 m are measured, others are estimated using 4 m jalons as a reference. Crown circumference is drawn and the stem and most important branches are sketched (Fig. 3.11). Detailed branching patterns are not included in view of the time required in the field, the intended storage and retrieval system, and last but not least the intended range of applications of the system.

3.4 Herbaceous Transect Area

The herbaceous transect area, split up into adjacent 2 x 2 m quadrats, enables analysis of species composition within the map units of the 1:200 vegetation map of the core area. The complete 200 m² surface of the 50 quadrats covers the minimum area of a forest vegetation sample according to Mueller-Dombois and Ellenberg (1974).

3.4.1 Permanent Quadrats

To obtain information on the relation between structure and dynamics of vegetation types, Londo (1971, 1978, 1982) discusses the role of repeated vegetation

Chapter 4

The Tree Model

To overcome the limitations of the two-dimensional images of plan and profile drawings, a three-dimensional forest model has been developed that plays a central role in the data processing and modelling. First, literature dealing with tree models relevant for the forest model development will be reviewed. This is followed by a description of the tree component model developed for the information system.

4.1 Review of Tree Models

4.1.1 Models of Tree Architecture

Hallé and Oldeman (1970) and Hallé et al. (1978) define the architecture of a tree as "the visible, morphological expression of the genetic blue-print of a tree at any one time". Based on analyses of tree growth with the help of the architectures of many observed trees, the authors developed the abstract concept of the architectural model. The model can be seen as the plan of growth of a tree. The tree architecture is the skeleton that fills the ecotope, i.e. the space the tree fills during its life-span (Oldeman 1974b). References on structural features of individual trees can be found in Hallé and Oldeman (1970) and Zimmermann and Brown (1971).

Different computerized models have been developed to simulate tree architecture using the principles laid down in the first hand-drawn tree models. Deterministic models consistently repeating the branching pattern illustrate the effect of changing values for the parameters of branching on form (Honda 1971), or on form during growth (Edelin 1977, 1984; De Reffye 1979; De Reffye and Edelin 1989). Fisher (1984) argues that even if a model includes stochastic probability in development of meristems that may closely fit the pooled real distribution of a tree or population, still each individual meristem and module (branch unit) is responding to a wide variety of exogenous and endogenous influences, each presumably with its own probability of plant response. Iteration is per definition unpredictable (Oldeman 1974a) and occurs apart from the programmed development, especially in species in stressed climates or circumstances. Although such computer models of branching pattern and crown geometry may produce realistic results of simulations, there is a fundamental problem in using these to infer adaptive tree growth. Because influences from outside, for example internal and external shading, are not used for prediction of meristem responses and branch extension, the summarized growth effect cannot explain shape or development of an actual tree inserted in a stand. Tree shape can only in general terms be correlated with its architecture as done by Hallé et al. (1978), describing physiognomic tree shapes as simple overall stereometric surfaces of revolution, e.g. funnels, spheres, hemispheres and discs.

4.1.2 Two-Dimensional Tree Shape Models

For two-dimensional computer-plotted depiction of measured trees in profile section Brünig (1977) and Werger et al. (1984) used rectangular crown shapes on perpendicular stems. Horn (1971) uses three parameters to describe the wide variety of shapes of tree crowns in transverse section: absolute size (c), ratio of height to width (b) and degree of convexity (a) in the Eq. (1).

$$x^a + (by)^a = c^a. \quad (1)$$

X and y are variable Cartesian coordinates. When $a = 1$ the equation represents a straight line, when $a > 1$ it becomes convex. This equation behaves nicely in the quadrant where x and y are positive. For the other quadrants the equation of the positive quadrant must be reflected. Cheviron (1985) uses a similar approach.

For depicting trees in computer-plotted profile drawings, Kätzler (1984) and Bücking et al. (1986) presented a model for broadleaved trees constructed of four quarters of ellipses: two quarter ellipses above the greatest crown width, that is fixed at $1/4$ of the crown length and two below this width. For white fir (*Abies alba*), the greatest width is fixed at three-quarters of the crown length. Norway spruce (*Picea abies*) crowns are represented by overlapping triangles. Inclination of the stem is derived from the relation between the projection of the tree top and the tree position on the ground. Crown projections, measured at six extreme points with compass-angle and distance to the tree base, are depicted as a polygon. Although these models meet with the need of visual expression they are two-dimensional and not suitable for explanatory forest modelling applications.

4.1.3 Three-Dimensional Tree Shape Models

Many rather simple surfaces of revolution have been used for tree shapes in forest simulation models. Cones are used by Ford (1976), Cannell (1983), Hari et al. (1985) and Mohren (1987). Mohren used cones of different height/diameter ratios. Satterlund (1983) modelled trees as a crown consisting of a cone at the top of a cylinder and the bole as a solid cylinder. Akça (1983) and von Spellmann (1986) present a tree crown model to be measured in aerial photographs from four points on the visible periphery of the crown and a fifth point representing the top of the tree. The visible part of the tree, called "Lichtkrone", is calculated from a surface of revolution that takes into account the individual crown form. Needle-leaved trees, such as pine (*Pinus sylvestris*) and Norway spruce (*Picea abies*), have an average crown form between a cone and a quadratic paraboloid. Broad-leaved trees, such as beech (*Fagus sylvatica*) and oak (*Quercus robur* and *Q. petraea*), come close to a quadratic paraboloid and a hemisphere. For simulation of carbon flow in *Pinus radiata* stands, Rook et al. (1985) used an ellipsoid crown shape. The above mentioned cone-shaped models for coniferous trees and the elliptic shapes for broadleaved trees come closest to the requirements of the system presented in this study (Chap. 1). However, because they imply a symmetric surface of revolution, positioned by a vertical rotation axis which is the bole of the tree, they simplify asymmetric crowns and bending trees, which are common features in many natural and seminatural forests.

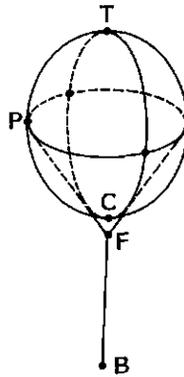


Fig. 4.1. The three-dimensional tree model. *T* top of the tree; *P* periphery point; *C* crown base; *F* fork; *B* stembase

4.2 Tree Model Description

For computerized data processing, the volume occupied by one tree at a certain moment in a certain forest stand is described by the co-ordinates of eight points, representing: tree base, place of first fork, top and base of the tree crown and the four extremities (peripheral points) of the crown circumference in positive and negative *x*- and *y*-direction. All *z*-co-ordinates are derived from height measurements while *x*- and *y*-co-ordinates are digitized from the hand-drawn plan. *X*- and *y*-co-ordinates of the top and base of the crown and of the fork, that are not drawn in projection are computed separately. By making use of the ellipsoid nature of most deciduous tree crowns, a best-fitting wrapping can be constructed by connecting the four peripheral points of the crown circumference with quarters of ellipses, using the ellipse formula (2) where *a* and *b* are the axis halves of the ellipse.

$$x^2/a^2 + y^2/b^2 = 1. \quad (2)$$

To represent a wide variety of crown shapes in transverse section, the equation of Horn(1971) is used and adapted. The vertical transverse sections through the top and the base of the crown and the peripheral points are represented by Eq. (3). The equation of these vertical crown curves is cognate to the formula of the quadratic equation of the ellipse but has a varying exponent *E*:

$$x^E/a^E + y^E/b^E = 1. \quad (3)$$

Tree base (*B*) and fork (*F*) and peripheral points (P_n) are connected with straight lines *BF* and FP_n (Fig. 4.1). In the case of a crown base lower than the fork, the tree base and the crown base (*C*) are connected (*BC*) and the lines FP_n are omitted. In ground plan the position of standing live or dead trees is indicated by, respectively,

an open and solid circle proportional to the tree diameter. Dead trees lying on the forest floor are shown by straight lines. Micro-relief resulting from the uprooting of a tree is represented with the help of shapes similar to those used for tree crown simulation.

4.2.1 Crown Projection

The crown projection is approximated by the compound of four quarters of ellipses through the peripheral points (Fig. 4.2). The length of the axes of one quarter ellipse equals the absolute difference between the x-values and the y-values of two adjacent peripheral points, e.g. P_1 - P_2 , P_2 - P_3 , P_3 - P_4 , P_4 - P_1 . The centre of a quarter ellipse is determined by the x- and y-value of the extreme peripheral point in y-direction and x-direction, respectively. Except for the case of equal y-values for P_1 and P_3 and equal x-values for P_2 and P_4 , the centres of the four quarter ellipses do not coincide (Fig. 4.2). The complex figure of four quarter ellipses with different centres and axes is nevertheless continuous because the tangents of neighbouring ellipse segments are in line in the peripheral points. The approximated crown projection described above can be transposed onto a horizontal "peripheral plane" at peripheral level above the ground.

4.2.2 Crown Projections of Bending Trees

In the case of bending trees, the position of the tree base may be situated outside the crown projection. When peripheral points of such often narrow crowns are digitized

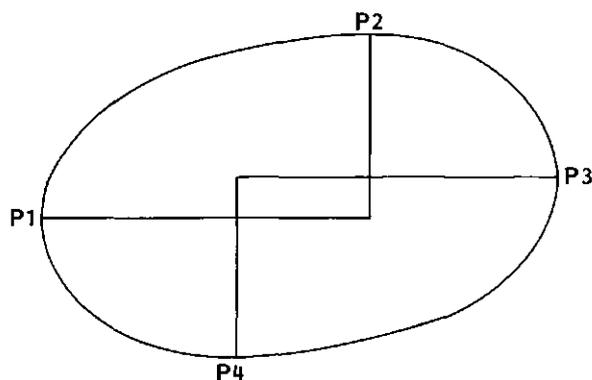


Fig. 4.2. The position of a tree crown in horizontal projection is indicated by a compound of quarter ellipses stretched up by digitized peripheral points, being the extremities of the tree crown in x- and y-direction. The centres of the four quarter ellipses mostly do not coincide

in the above-mentioned way, the model may reproduce an exaggerated crown projection. The degree of exaggeration depends on the angle with the positive x-axis, in which the narrow crown bends away from the stem base (Fig. 4.3). To prevent distortion, these crowns are to be digitized and processed in a rotated co-ordinate system. The new x-axis is stretched between the stem base and the most remote point of the crown, in relation to the stem base. This point at the same time is a peripheral point (P_3). Other peripheral points are digitized in the rotated system as described above. The rotation angle can be derived from the direction of the line from the tree base to the most remote peripheral point (P_3).

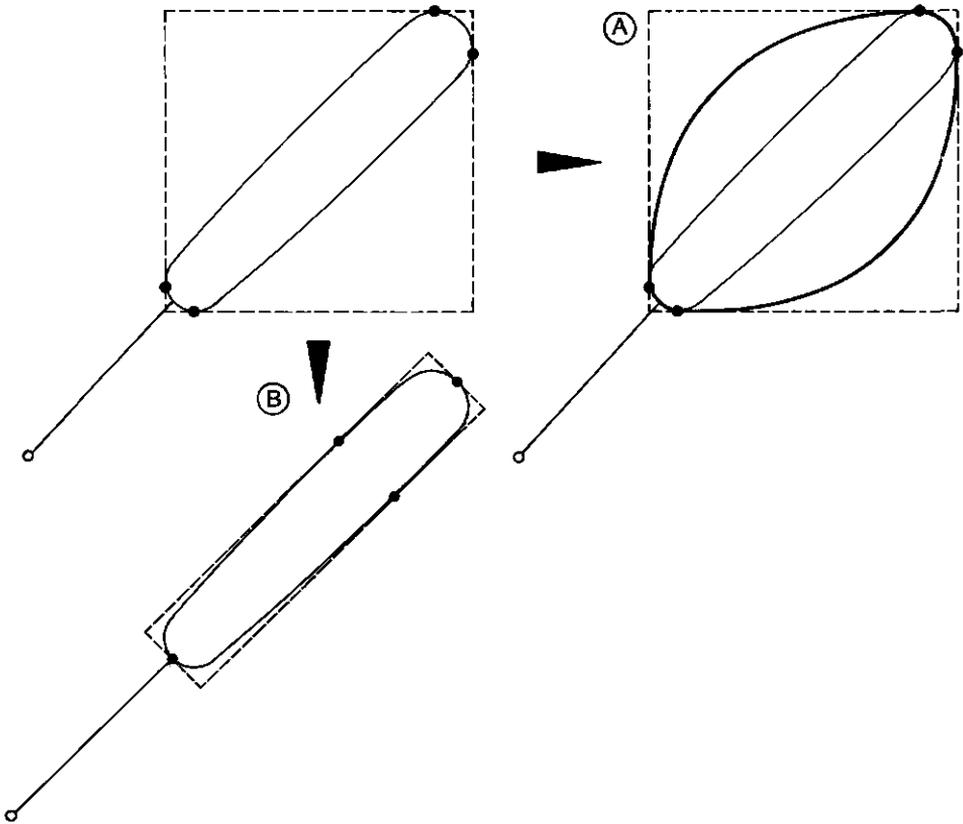


Fig. 4.3. Narrowly stretched crowns of bent trees may become exaggerated, when digitized in the normal co-ordinate system (A). Digitized in a rotated coordinate system, with its x-axis parallel to the direction in which the narrow crown bends away from the stem foot, distortion is prevented (B)

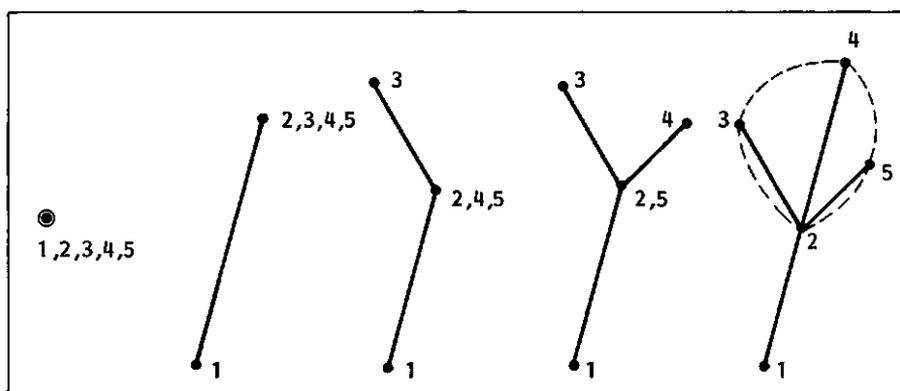


Fig. 4.4. Ends, bends, and bifurcations of fallen dead trees are digitized in the sequence 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. Their position in the model is indicated as a *straight* line or a *bifurcated* line. Bifurcations of a higher order are omitted

4.2.3 Dead Trees

Standing dead trees in the plan are represented by a solid circle proportional to their diameter. Fallen dead trees if not forked are digitized as a straight line. Forked fallen dead trees are digitized as shown in Figure 4.4.

4.2.4 Calculation of Unknown Co-Ordinates

The peripheral points and the tree base position have measured x and y co-ordinates. Except for the case of the profile drawing in the woody transect area, neither x - nor y -values of the fork and the top and base of the crown are measured in the field. These values are calculated from the eccentricity of the tree base in the crown projection. Eccentricity of the tree base in x -direction (eB_x) can be defined as the ratio of distance between tree base (B_x) and centre point of the crown projection (M_x) and crown radius (Cr_x) as in Eqs. (4), (5) and (6).

$$Cr_x = (P3X - P1X) / 2 \quad (4)$$

$$M_x = P1X + Cr_x \quad (5)$$

$$eB_x = (M_x - B_x) / Cr_x \quad (6)$$

The values of the eccentricity-index eB_x as a function of the position of the tree base in the crown projection are depicted in Figure 4.5.

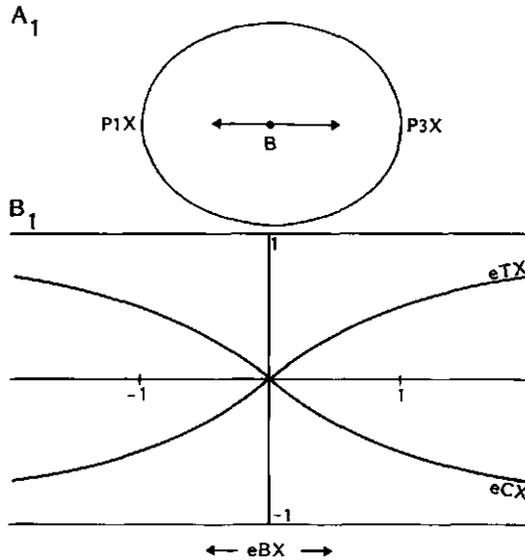


Fig. 4.5. A Position of the tree base (B) in the crown projection. The eccentricity index of the tree base $eB_x=0$ if B is situated in the centre of the crown (measured in x direction only). $eB_x=1$ if B is situated on the left crown periphery ($B_x=P1_x$). $eB_x=-1$ if B is situated on the right crown periphery ($B_x=P3_x$). If B is situated outside the crown projection, then $eB_x>1$ or $eB_x<-1$. B Graph of the eccentricity index of the crown base (eC_x) and of the top of the crown (eT_x) expressed as the arctangent of the eccentricity index of the tree base (eB_x) [Eqs. (7) and (8)].

The further the tree base becomes situated outside the crown projection, the further T_x and C_x will move towards the crown periphery, each of them in an opposite direction. For trees with great crown depth the shift is reduced. For y -co-ordinates an analogous procedure is followed.

Because crown top and crown base can never exceed the crown projection, the eccentricity indexes for the top (eT_x) and the base of the crown (eC_x) should lie between plus and minus one. This can be achieved by expressing eT_x and eC_x as the arctangent (in radians) of the eccentricity of the tree base (eB_x), with a reach between $\pi/2$ and $-\pi/2$, multiplied by $2/\pi$, as in Eqs. (8) and (9). Because the shift of the top of the crown is opposite to the direction of the shift of the tree base, eT_x is negated. A reduction factor for relative stem length (R) reduces eccentricity of top and base of the crown when the ratio stem length (= height of the crown base) to total tree height increases [Eqs (7)]:

$$R = (1 - C_z/T_z) \quad (7)$$

$$eT_x = -2/\pi * \arctg(eB_x) * R \quad (8)$$

$$eC_x = 2/\pi * \arctg(eB_x) * R. \quad (9)$$

The x-values for top and base of the crown can now be calculated (formula 10 and 11) from:

$$T_x = M_x + Cr_x * eT_x \quad (10)$$

$$C_x = M_x + Cr_x * eC_x = M_x Cr_x * eT_x. \quad (11)$$

Eccentricities along the y-axes eB_y , eC_y , eT_y are computed in an analogous way. This implies that the x- and y-coordinates of the top and base of the crown generally do not coincide. X- and y-values of the tree fork are determined by the line connecting the tree base and the tree top at fork height (F_z).

4.2.5 Transverse Crown Sections

The crown surface in transverse section through a peripheral point and the top or base of the crown is approximated by the curve generated by Eq. (3). This equation behaves like the ellipse Eq. (2) for positive x- and y- (in this case z-) values. In order to generate complete transverse sections, the positive quadrant of the ellipse has to be reflected to the other quadrants, which have either negative x- or y-values. Axes and centre of the curve generated by Eq. (3) are determined similarly to the ground plan described for the ellipse. All upper transverse sections have one axis (b) in common, equal to the distance from the top of the crown to the peripheral plane. Similarly, the lower transverse sections have a common axis which equals the distance from the base of the crown to the peripheral plane. The horizontal axes (a) differ in length. For the upper and lower transverse sections these lengths equal the distance from the peripheral points to the projection of respectively the top and the base of the crown on the peripheral plane (Fig. 4.6).

4.2.6 Fitting of Transverse Crown Sections

To achieve a best-fitting wrapping of crowns in transverse section, the exponent E in Eq. (3) can be varied. An E-value of one corresponds to a straight line. E = 2 results in an ellipse. If E > 2 the crown curve will be more convex, becoming rectangular as the exponent approaches infinity (Fig. 4.7).

Although this is not relevant for most broadleaved temperate trees, an exponent less than 1 produces a concave crown curve. Such a curve can be used for tropical tree ferns, e.g. described by Hallé et al. (1978) and Brünig (1976). Thus, with help of Eq. (3), a wide variety of transverse section curves can be generated.

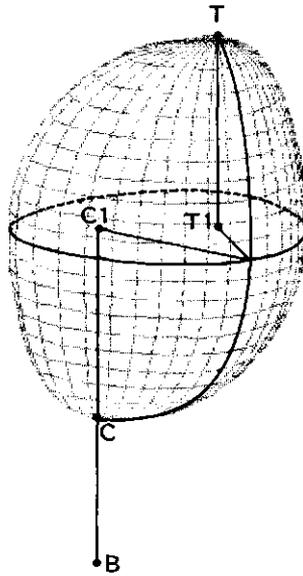


Fig. 4.6. Crown curves through a peripheral point and the crown top have a common axis $T-T_1$. Crown curves through a peripheral point and the crown base also have a common axis $C-C_1$. Because the x - and y -co-ordinates of the crown base and the crown top generally do not coincide both axes $T-T_1$ and $C-C_1$ are not in line

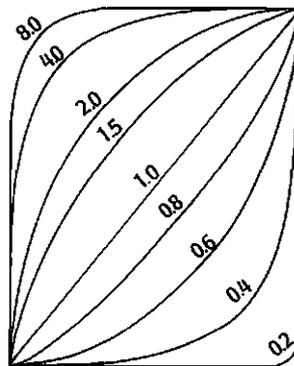


Fig. 4.7. A different exponent E causes the vertical crown curves to become more or less convex or concave

The most appropriate exponent for a fitting wrapping has to be worked out for each individual tree. For this purpose, the crown radius is measured at three-fourths the height between the peripheral plane and the top and base of the crown, respectively. A is the crown radius at three-fourths the height y between the top or base of the crown and the peripheral plane, b the crown radius at peripheral height. The ratio a/b is an indicative value in relation to the exponent of the vertical curves. The solution to the equation $(a/b)^E + (3/4)^E = 1$ [see Eq. (3)] with the unknown E can be an iterative or graphical procedure (Fig. 4.8). However, determination of this ratio for each separate tree in the field would make field work more complex and time-consuming. As a compromise, with help of the hand-drawn transect profile, the exponent is approximated, per species, for the upper crown part (Table 4.1). In spite of high values of variance, because of irregular undulating crown surface and only one measure of a , the E -value for most broadleaved tree species is about two.

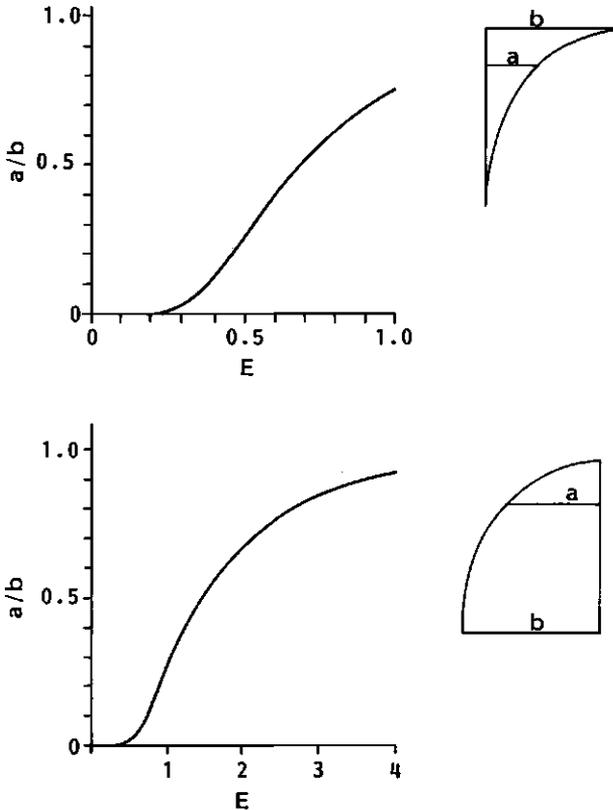


Fig. 4.8. Graph to determine the exponent E of a crown curve by measuring the ratio a/b . a is the crown diameter at respectively three-fourths the depth of the crown curve above periphery height, in the case of spheric crown curves and at one-fourth the depth of a crown curve underneath periphery height in the case of hollow crown curves. b is the crown diameter at periphery height. Besides this graphical solution, the Eq. $(a/b)^E + (3/4)^E = 1$ can be solved through an iterative procedure

Table 4.1. Estimated values of mean exponent for the vertical crown curves of different tree species and their variance. For each tree species 100 trees were sampled and the ratio a/b provided the values for the exponent E (see Fig. 4.8).

Species	E	s^2
<i>Pinus sylvestris</i>	1.997	0.446
<i>Fagus sylvatica</i>	2.046	0.304
<i>Quercus robur</i>	2.165	0.205
<i>Fraxinus excelsior</i>	2.229	0.175
<i>Betula pendula</i>	2.256	0.550

4.2.7 Horizontal Crown Sections

Analogous to the vertical curves starting from the four primary peripheral points, from any point on the horizontal ellipses in the peripheral plane, vertical crown curves generated by Eq. (3) can be sent to the crown top or base. All crown curves above the peripheral plane have a common vertical axis in the line connecting the top of the crown and its projection on the peripheral plane. Similarly, all crown curves under the peripheral plane have a common vertical axis in the line connecting the base of the crown and its projection on the peripheral plane. Determination of the co-ordinates of a point on a horizontal crown section at level h above the peripheral plane can be done using the equation of one of the vertical crown curves (Fig. 4.9).

The projected primary peripheral points P_1, P_2, P_3 and P_4 are indicated in the groundplan. Therefore the relation between the radius vector x at level h above the periphery plane and the radius vector at the peripheral level is expressed in Eq. (12) by substitution of the height h above peripheral level in Eq. (3) of a vertical crown curve.

$$x^E/a^E + y^E/b^E = 1 \quad (3)$$

$$x^E/a^E + h^E/b^E = 1. \quad (12)$$

Formula (12) can also be written as a scale factor in formula (13), expressing the ratio between the radius vector at height h (x) and the radius vector (a) in the peripheral plane.

$$x/a = (1 - h^E/b^E)^{1/E}. \quad (13)$$

Because all vertical crown curves have a common vertical axis b , the scale factor (13) depends only on height above or below the peripheral plane. Therefore the horizontal crown section at level h above the peripheral plane, that can be described as a set of radius vectors, is the result of uniform scaling of the crown section of four quarter ellipses at the peripheral level. This scaling in the x - y -co-ordinate system is centred in the top of the crown (or the base for the part of the crown under the peripheral plane). Thus at every height level in our model, the horizontal section of the crown is determined by another set of quarter ellipses. Similarly as in the peripheral plane, these ellipses connect the points of intersection of the plane at that level, with the

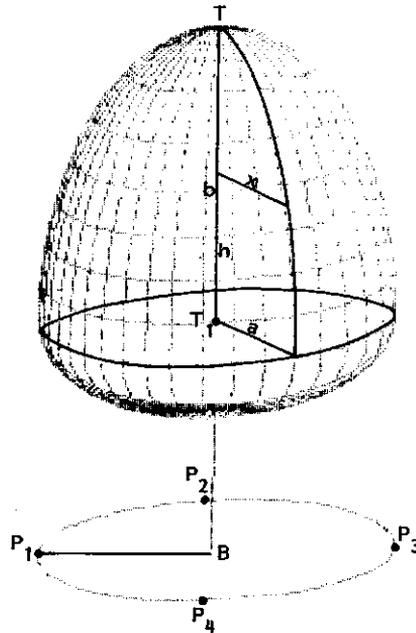


Fig. 4.9. The tree model built with horizontal quarterellipses and vertical crown curves produces a continuous, smooth, well-defined surface, that wraps the volume occupied by the tree crown. The vertical crown curves have an exponent that fits best to each tree species. The common axis b , which equals $T-T_1$, for all vertical crown curves above the peripheral plane is indicated. For one crown curve the radius vectors x at height h above the peripheral plane and a in the peripheral plane are indicated.

vertical crown curves which are stretched, according to Eq. (3), between the four peripheral points and the top or base of the crown.

Consequently all vertical curves generated by Eq. (3) starting from any point at the four quarter ellipses in the peripheral plane, cross all horizontal ellipses at any height above or under the peripheral plane (Fig. 4.9). Contrarily to a surface of revolution, in this model the crown surface is determined by different vertical crown curves that each link up with the compound elliptical crown circumference at the peripheral level. A great variety of physiognomical tree shapes or stylized volumes occupied by trees can thus be described using the same equations for all transverse sections (Fig. 4.10).

4.2.8 Fitting of Crown Projections

The a/b values (Fig. 4.7) measured for a 100 crown projections, regardless species, provided a mean exponent of 2.019 with a variance of 0.405. Generally the planimetered surface of a hand-drawn crown projection differs from the surface that

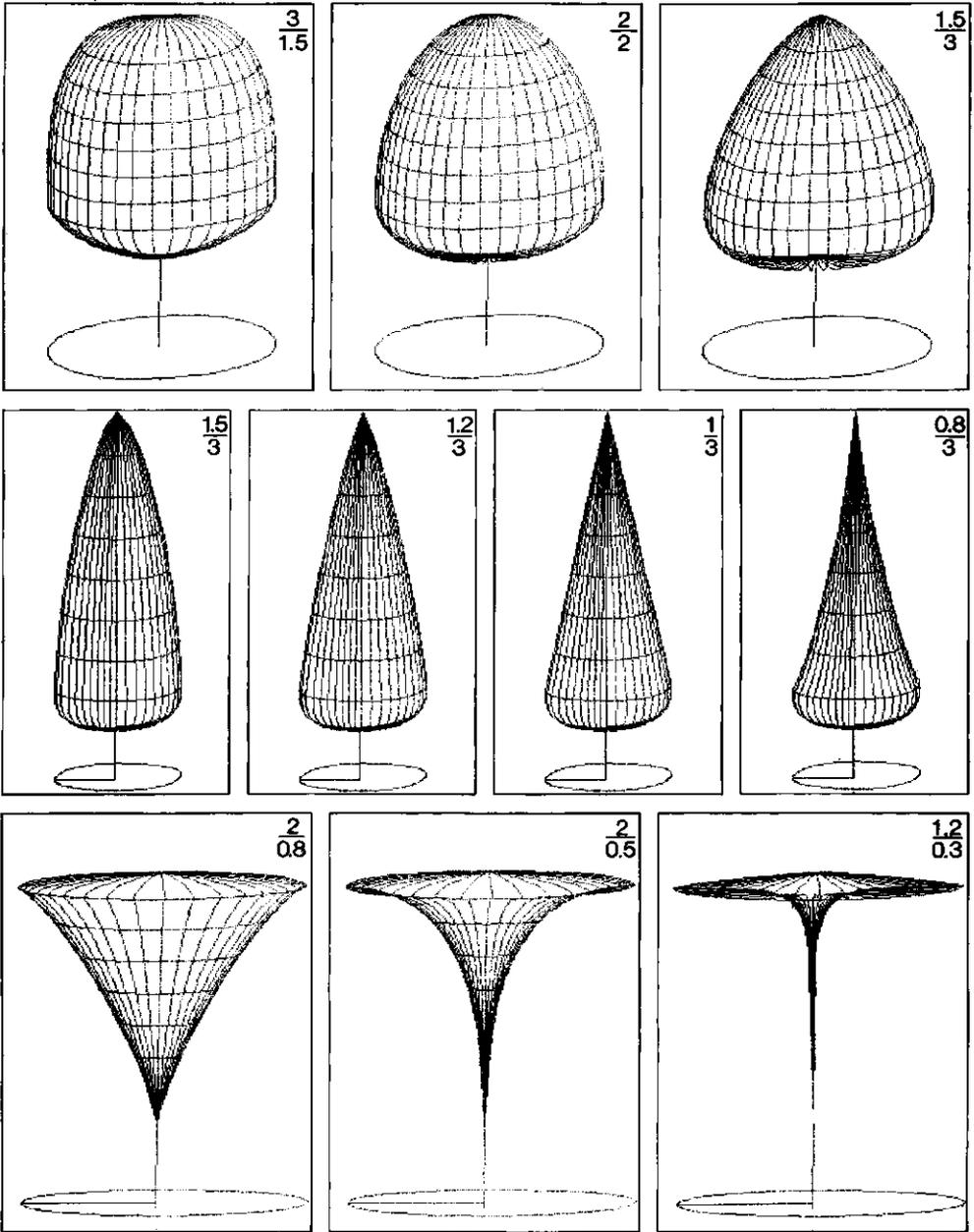


Fig. 4.10. Tree forms generated with different values of the exponent E of the vertical crown curves. The E -value of the upper crown curve (E_u) and lower crown curve (E_l) of the depicted tree shapes is printed in the fraction E_u/E_l .

results from the model calculations, because irregularities, particularly indentations in a mainly convex crown circumference, are not accounted for in the elliptical model. The relation between the planimetered and calculated surfaces of crown projections is shown in Figure 4.11 for crowns of different sizes. Projections of angular crowns, frequently occurring in old trees in closed canopies, are exaggerated if the crown angles point in x or y direction. In such cases the original straight sides of the crown circumference between two peripheral points most often become convex.

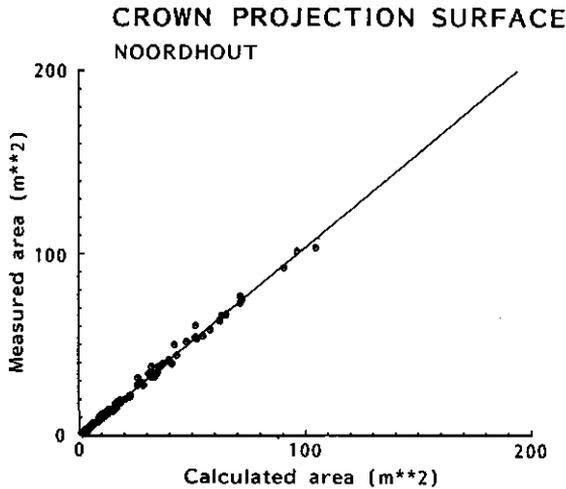


Fig. 4.11. Relation between the surface of the hand-drawn and elliptically computed crown projection in the forest reserve of Noordhout (The Netherlands) with *Pinus sylvestris*, *Quercus robur*, *Betula pendula* and *Fagus sylvatica*. The measured hand-drawn area = 1.029 x calculated area.

4.3 Modelling Uprooting Mound-and-Pit Micro-Relief

Uprootings are drawn in ground plan in the woody transect area and the core area. By making use of the elliptical character of their circumference (Brewer and Merrit 1978; Beatty 1981), uprootings can be represented using a procedure similar to the one discussed for crown projections of bending trees (Chap. 5.4). The mound peripheral points in x and y direction MP_1 to MP_3 are digitized in a rotated co-ordinate system, the x-axis of which coincides with the midline of the trunk (Fig. 4.12). The tree base

(TB) of the fallen tree thus coincides with MP_4 . The adjacent pit can be considered as a compound of two quarter ellipses. Two peripheral pit points coincide with the peripheral mound points MP_1 and MP_3 . The third peripheral pit point, PP , lies on the outer edge of the pit in the x -direction. The mound as well as the pit are depicted in profile as a compound of two quarter ellipses, by using the height of the mound and depth of the pit and the peripheral points of the ground plan. The spatial shape of mound and pit are simulated just as the upper and lower part of the tree crowns. Because the rounded form of the mound in transverse section is best approximated by an ellipse, the exponent of the vertical "crown curves" for the mound is kept quadratic.

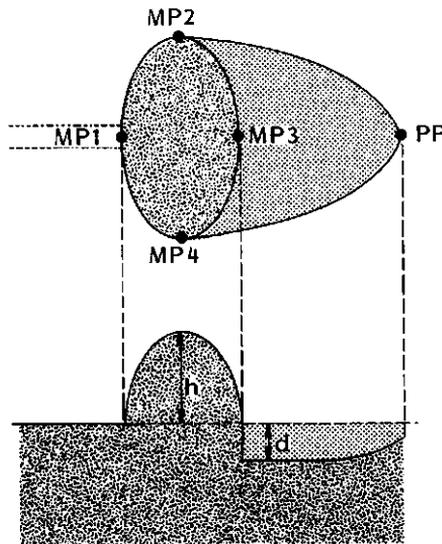


Fig. 4.12. The position of uprooting is indicated as a compound of quarter ellipses. The four extremities in x - and y -direction of the mound in horizontal projection (MP_n) are digitized in a rotated co-ordinate system, with the x -axis parallel to the midline of the trunk, similar to a bent tree (Fig. 4.3). In the same rotated system, the pit is considered as a compound of two quarter-ellipses stretched up between the two mound peripheral points MP_1 and MP_3 and a third pit peripheral point (PP). h is the height of the mound and d is the depth of the pit

Processing of Primary Tree Characteristics

From the ORACLE database any type of data or combination of data types can be selected. By using the program ORACLEX (see Appendix) a complete standard format file for one object can be retrieved from the database that fits all computer programs developed for data processing. The programs are written in VAX-FORTRAN for data processing and plotting on the computer (VAX and micro-VAX) and in BASIC for the Personal Computer (Olivetti).

5.1 Computing of Crown Area, Crown Cover, Crown Volume and Basal Area

Crown area, crown cover, crown volume and basal area can be computed with the program ARBOSUM (see Appendix). These values are also computed separately for species and for 10 x 10 m blocks of the core area (Table 5.1).

Crown area is calculated as the cumulative area of all crown projections. The crown cover is the cumulative area of all tree crown projections multiplied with their inner crown cover (see Chap. 3). The crown volume is the cumulative volume calculated from the tree crown model. The basal area is calculated from the diameter at breast height.

5.2 Statistical Analysis of Tree Data

The program SILVISTAT (see Appendix) produces computer-plotted distribution diagrams, point plots and regressions. The program includes GENSTAT procedures (Alvey et al. 1982) for statistical processing. For example, regressions can be made of height of fork, crown base and periphery against stem diameter (Fig. 5.1).

5.3 Two Dimensional Computer Plotting of Forest Structure

For the purpose of depiction and analysis of data on forest structure the plot program ARBOPLOT has been developed. Plots of ground plan and profile of the woody transect area as well as of the core area can be computer-plotted with the plot program ARBOPLOT (see Appendix). Plans and profiles in the original core area x-y-co-ordinate system can be directly plotted. For transects at an angle with the core area x-axis, first new co-ordinates in a rotated x-y-co-ordinate system are calculated with the program

Table 5.1. Example of the output of the program ARBOSUM for the core area of the Otterskooi (The Netherlands). Crown area (CA), crown cover (COV), crown volume (Vcr) and basal area (G) are calculated per hectare. The same values are tabulated for the core area blocks of 10 x 10 m and for separate species (codes 14 = *Fraxinus excelsior*, 18 = *Alnus glutinosa*, 25 = *Sorbus aucuparia*). The first two columns under BLOCK indicate row and column of the block. For further explanation see text

Otterkooi (ARBOSUM.SYN)

Synoptic table for volume and area computations

Results per ha

Crown area (m ²)	13,495.17
Crown cover (m ²)	8018.61
Crown volume (m ³)	56,276.07
Basal area (cm ²)	233,076.31

Results per species per ha

Species	CA	COV	Vcr	G
14	4612.26	2894.38	21,034.68	59,638.03
18	3710.28	1908.63	14,275.62	107,479.86
25	1118.18	835.50	3946.44	13,454.90

Results per 10 x 10 m block

Block	CA	COV	Vcr	G
1-1	25.66	15.23	108.38	277.11
1-2	118.55	78.83	508.57	2027.66

NEWTRAN (see Appendix). The beginning and end of the new transect must be entered in core area co-ordinates. The trees to be plotted can be selected as to tree species, architectural code or any other tree parameter (Figs. 5.2, 5.3 and 5.4). Following on a daily field session the BASIC version running on a portable PC provides a visual control on the computer screen of data collected that day.

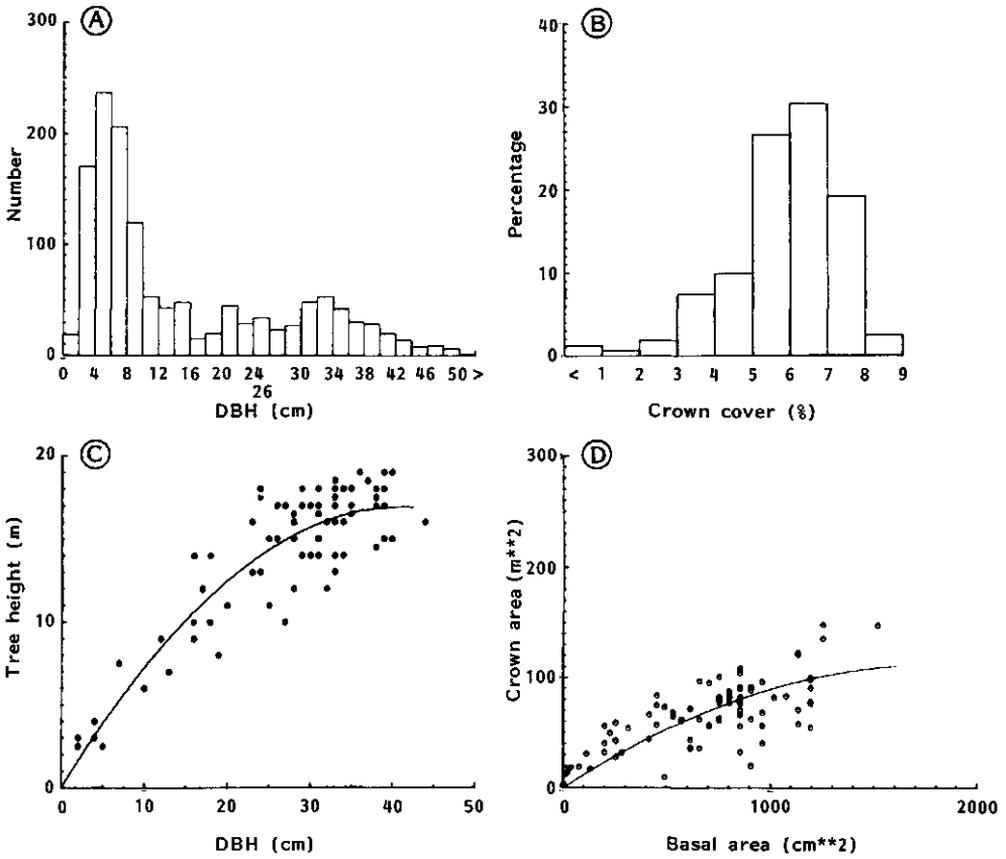


Fig. 5.1. Examples of computer-plotted diagrams and graphics of tree data of the core area. **A** Diameter-frequency diagram. **B** Frequency diagram of inner crown cover. **C** Top height-diameter point plot. **D** Crown area-basal area point plot

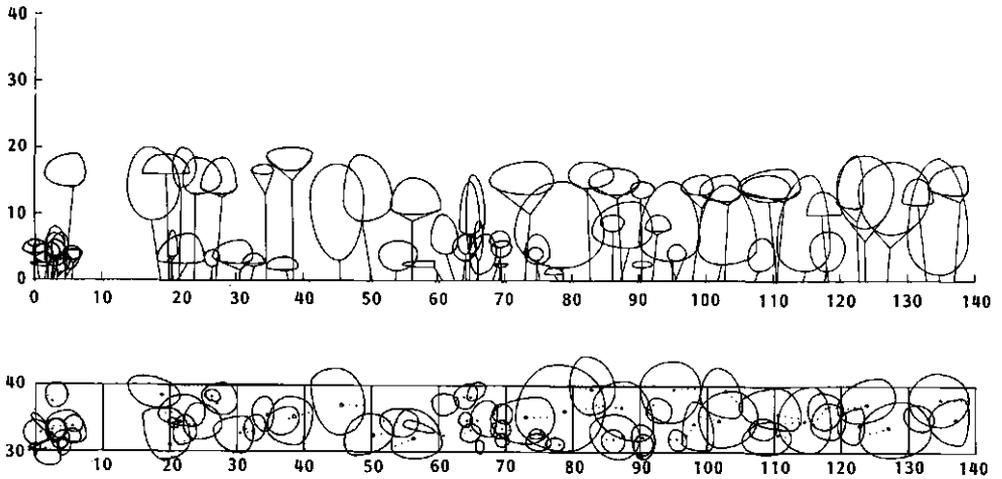


Fig. 5.2. Example of a computer-plotted profile and plan of the transect area of the forest reserve Noordhout (province Utrecht, The Netherlands)

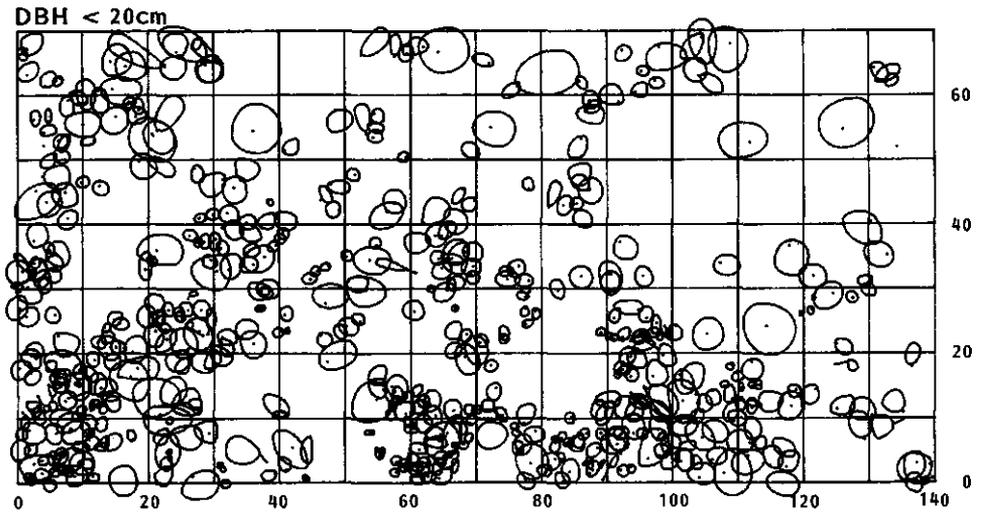


Fig. 5.3. Example of a computer-plotted ground plan drawing of the core area of the forest reserve Noordhout (province Utrecht, The Netherlands). Selective plotting of all trees less than 15 m height shows a characteristic net pattern distribution regeneration under a decay phase of the planted *Pinus sylvestris* stand

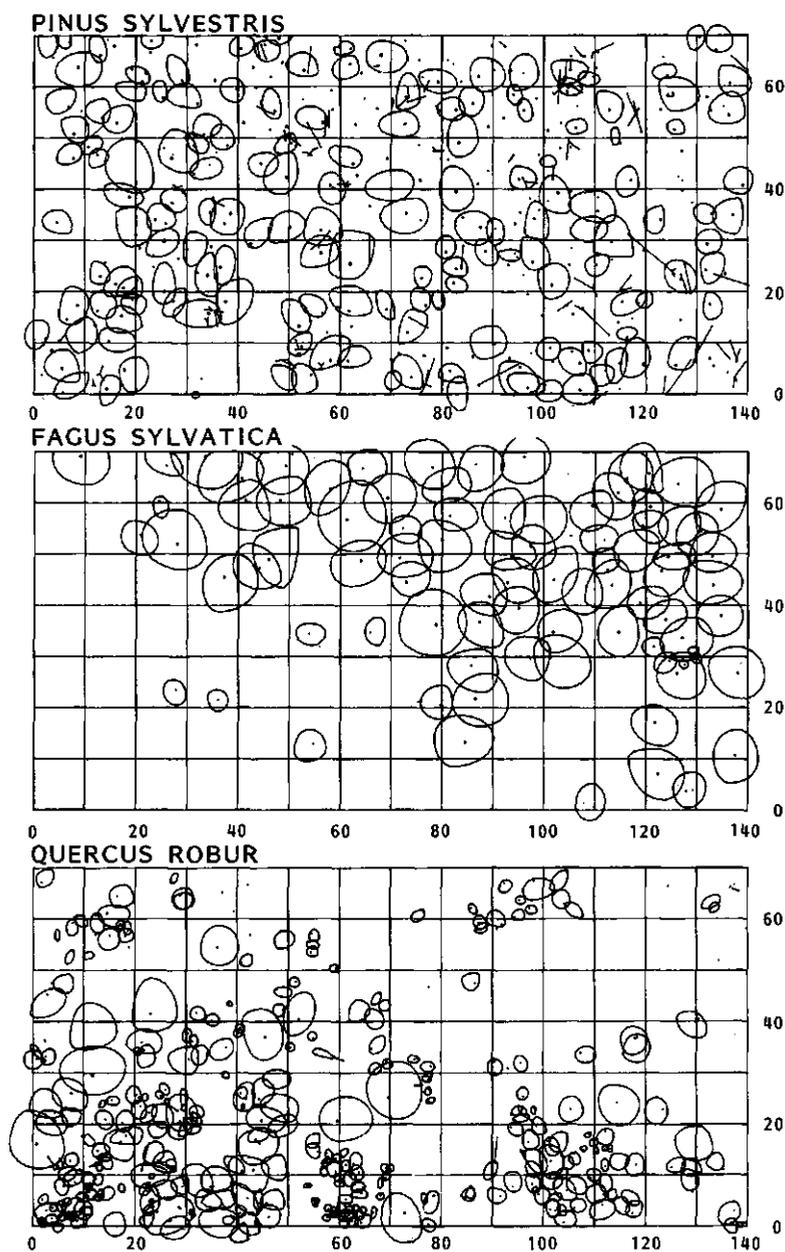


Fig. 5.4. Example of a computer-plotted ground plan drawing of the core area of the forest reserve Noordhout (province Utrecht, The Netherlands). Selective plotting of *Fagus sylvatica* and *Quercus robur* shows that both species exclude each other

Application Programs

The tree model is not only a tool for two-dimensional depiction but can also be used for a three-dimensional representation of forest structure. In this chapter application programs based on the three-dimensional tree model are presented.

6.1 Light Simulation

Since light is critical to the growth of green plants, the shading by trees in the forest canopy profoundly affects the growth of seedlings, saplings and herbs in the understorey. The light reaching a certain point of the forest floor, or whatever point inside the forest at any other level, depends on canopy cover. Foliage and branches intercept the incident light (Horn 1971; Terborgh 1985).

Evans and Coombe (1959), Anderson (1963, 1964), Bonhomme and Chartier (1971), Bonhomme (1976), Ducrey (1975), Hari et al. (1985) and Oker-Blom (1986) described the use of hemispherical photographs in computing radiation in woodlands. Barkman (1977) used similar techniques with a horizontoscope, used in city building and architecture (Tonne 1954), in studying the microclimate of juniper tree communities (*Juniperus communis*). Proctor (1980), Greis and Kellomäki (1981) and Prince (1987) applied the method to describe bryophyte habitats, to predict tree growth under varying shading and to measure canopy interception, respectively. The other way round, Ondok (1984) uses hemispherical photographs to simulate stand geometry in photosynthetic models. Yoda (1974) describes three-dimensional distribution of light intensity in a tropical forest of West Malaysia. Nakashizuka (1985) describes a model to predict diffuse light conditions in canopy gaps in a beech forest. These authors assume that the shape of the gap is circular and the canopy is horizontal and flat with scattered microgaps among the leaves.

The tree model described above (Chap. 4) can be used to simulate shading patterns determined by the forest architecture. Thus the impact of light availability upon species composition and occurrence and growth of young trees can be modelled. However, the effects of competition for light cannot be separated from those resulting from root competition. It is plausible that when trees die and cause a canopy gap, the root system belonging to those trees also dies. Canopy gaps, especially in zenith direction, also cause an increased throughfall of precipitation. A correlation between canopy cover and occurrence or growth of green plants in the undergrowth can therefore not be explained by light throughfall alone.

The three-dimensional forest model allows computation of the hemispherical cover for fixed points, inside the forest and above soil level, as an indication of the interception of diffuse light and changing oblique radiation. Cumulative cover values can be computed for the separate angles of the hemisphere from all crowns of trees within a certain radius. Light reflected by leaves, stems or branches is not taken into account. For this purpose

the program FOREYE was developed (Mansour 1986; Bijlsma 1989). The resulting values of such computation are processed with the subprogram FORFLUX in a similar way as a fish-eye lens- or hemispherical photograph (Anderson 1964; Ducrey 1975; Bonhomme 1976). The fish-eye computations for radiation assessment are made for the 50 adjacent relevés of the herbaceous transect area or in a grid in the ground plan or profile to derive an impression of horizontal and vertical light gradients as determined by the forest structure.

6.1.1 The Program FOREYE

The program FOREYE computes hemispherical crown cover for fixed points at any place in the forest model, over a matrix of 360 azimuthal degrees by 90 zenithal degrees. As stated before, for computation of hemispherical cover, data on forest structure must be available within a certain radius. Diffuse light distribution over a standard overcast hemisphere has been described in an empirical model by Moon and Spencer (1942). According to their cosine law, most radiation can be expected from the angles closest to zenith. Moreover, the oblique radiation coming from the lowest angles above the horizon is intercepted for the greater part on its long path through many tree crowns. The upper angles around zenith are therefore the most important ones for an indication of relative interception of radiation. To what extent the lower angles contribute depends on the actual forest structure. In uniform woods, Horn (1971) limited measurements to canopy coverage in a cone, directly above the view point subtending 10 solid degrees. If larger canopy gaps occur, canopy coverage should be regarded in a wider cone. Oblique radiation may then pass underneath a closed canopy directly above. A cone of 90° around zenith, for a point at ground level, can only be computed if data on trees in a radius of at least one maximum tree height are available. For the core area measuring 140 x 70 m with a maximum tree height of 20 m this means that such computations can only be made for points in an area of 30 x 100 m in the centre of the block. To compute the hemispherical cover, all trees in a 180° cone, within the radius equal to one length of the highest tree in the plot, are scanned for each horizontal and corresponding vertical degree. All individual trees are scanned sequentially for their main stem and crown including their branches.

For scanning purposes, the part of the main stem under the tree fork or under the crown base, in case the fork is situated above the crown base, is assumed to be cylindrical. The part of the main stem that starts branching and is situated higher than the tree fork or in the crown is assumed to be a cone ending in the tree top. Per tree the azimuthal left and right limit angles and the vertical angles of horizontal slices of the stems at 0.5 m intervals are calculated (Fig. 6.1).

For the crowns, first the horizontal left and right limit angles are determined, by computing the vertical tangent planes to the crown model. This can be done by computing the tangents and points of contact to the quarter ellipses of the crown projection in the x-y plane, facing to the point of observation or view point (V).

Next, between these limit angles subsequently all horizontal degrees are scanned vertically. All one-degree crown sections to be scanned can be seen as vertical planes, rotating over the previously delimited horizontal angle L_1-V-L_2 (Fig. 6.1a). The minimum and maximum angle covered by the crown is computed through iterative comparison of the angle from V to sequential points at the crown surface.

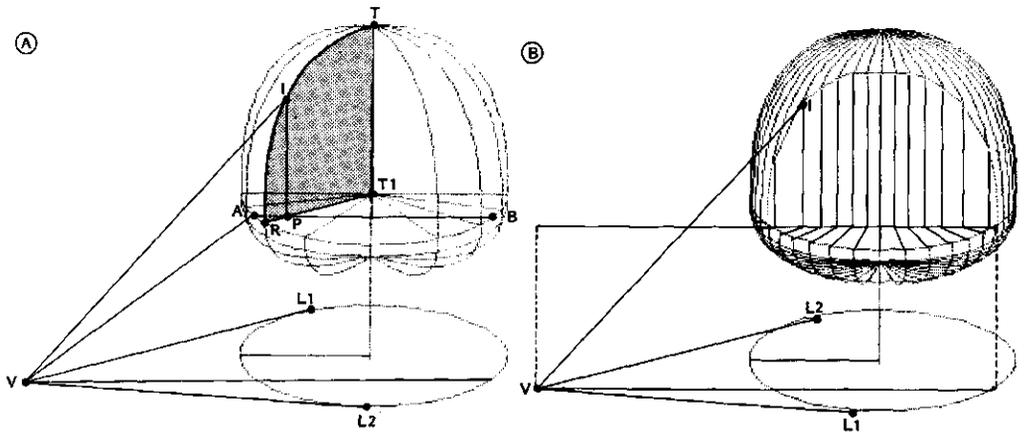


Fig. 6.1. A Computation of a point at the crown surface, as described in the text. B Plotting of the vertical section of the rotating plane through the eye point V with the tree crown, computed in the way as depicted in A

The program takes the following steps to compute these angles.

- A previously defined vertical plane shows a line of intersection with the periphery plane (AB) and two points of intersection with one or two quarter ellipses.
- The point of intersection nearest to V is called A. Because A lies on the peripheral ellipse it is also situated on the outer crown surface.
- The vertical angle made by the line VA is the starting angle for scanning the crown section upwards and downwards.
- To compute the next point on the crown surface along the line of intersection (AB), points (P) are arranged at equal distances. A vector radius (TP), passing through the projected top at the peripheral plane and a point P, intersects a periphery ellipse in point R.
- The crown surface height is determined by the intersection (I) between the perpendicular line in P and the vertical crown curve RT.
- The vertical angle $V-I_n$ is computed and compared with the angle $V-I_{n-1}$, the last computed point at the crown surface.

This procedure is repeated until a maximum angle for the upper part of the crown and a minimum angle for the lower part of the crown is found (Fig. 6.1b). Then the next horizontal degree is scanned. When all horizontal degrees per tree are scanned, all values of combinations of horizontal and vertical degrees of the crown circumference seen from point V are stored together with the inner crown cover of that tree. If one of the following tree crowns or stems that is to be scanned covers the same angles, cumulative inner crown cover values for those angles are computed using the formula (14).

$$\text{Cover (1+2)} = \text{cover (1)} + (100\% - \text{cover (1)}) * \text{cover(2)} \quad (14)$$

The crown shapes are regarded as homogeneously transparent bodies. Because of the

visual assessment of the inner crown cover, according to the decimal scale of Londo (see Appendix), neither the path length for the light to pass through the crown, nor the fact that the inner crown cover might change with the angle at which the light passes the crown have as yet been included in the model. The inner cover of the stems is 100 %. In case the point V, for which the hemispherical cover is computed, is situated under a tree

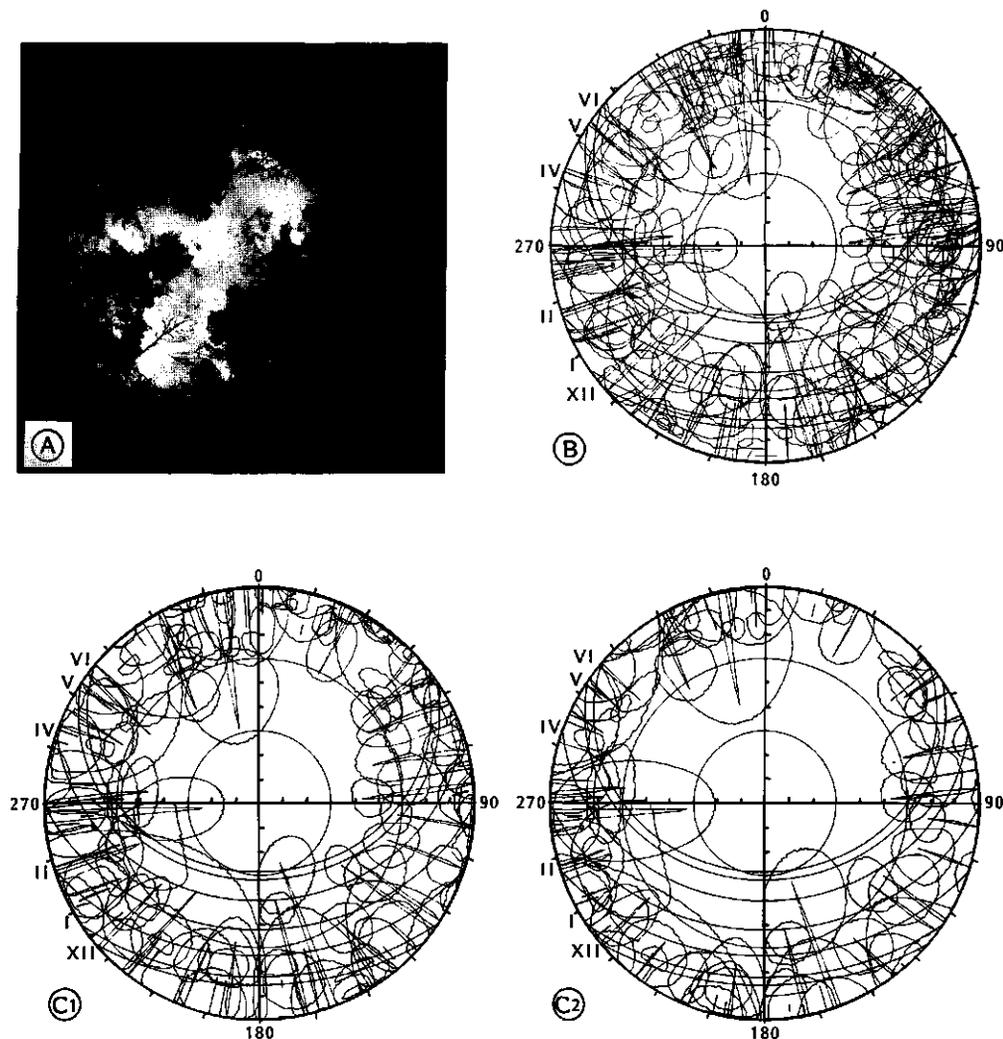


Fig. 6.2. A Example of a hemispherical photograph made in the core area of the forest object Noordhout during winter (broadleaved trees have no foliage). B Computer plot of the hemispherical coverage computed for the same core area co-ordinates from the forest model. C As B but computed for respectively a point 5 m (C1) and 10 m (C2) above the forest floor

crown (inside its crown projection), only the part below the peripheral level has to be scanned in a slightly different way. The described procedure has also been adapted for the case that the point of view *V* is not at ground level. In that case, dependent on the relative position of *V*, below, above or on the crown, and below or above the crown periphery, the tree crown is scanned in a different way. Trees lower than *V* are skipped. If *V* is situated between the peripheral level and the top of the tree, only the part above the peripheral level is scanned (Fig. 6.2).

The amounts of direct and diffuse light are computed for a sequence of days by the program FORFLUX (see Appendix). The underlying radiation model is based on standard functions of direct and diffuse light under clear sky and standard overcast sky in $J./m/s$ against sun height (de Wit et al. 1978). The distribution of diffuse light over brightness zones of the hemisphere is determined with the formulas of Ross (1981), distinguishing clear and standard overcast sky.

For the transects in the Netherlands monthly data on hourly values of sunshine duration distributive in percentage at 14 meteorological stations over the period 1956-1980 by the Royal Dutch Meteorological Institute (K.N.M.I. 1986) are used. Dependent on the hourly values the chance of sunshine at any moment is determined. There is an option for random or fractionary determination of hourly sunshine duration. The amounts of direct and diffuse light can be computed over any specified period of the year. However, because the data on inner crown cover concern summer assessments in the period May-September, only computations for this period are reliable.

6.2 Vegetation Data Processing and Forest Structure

For processing of vegetation data and environmental data, standard software packages are available, e.g. TWINSPAN (Hill 1979b; Jongman et al. 1987), DECORANA (Hill 1979a and Hill and Gauch 1980; Jongman et al. 1987), ELLENBERG (Ter Braak and Gremmen 1987) and CANOCO (Ter Braak 1986, 1987; Jongman et al. 1987).

Data sets of sequential relevés of the same herbaceous transect area are combined for processing with the programs TWINSPAN and DECORANA. Relevés made in different years of one quadrat can be assigned by TWINSPAN to different clusters. Similar cluster transition sequences for quadrats indicate similar vegetation changes in those parts of the transect area. The scores of the relevés on the first two DECORANA axes are plotted. A delineation for relevés belonging to the same TWINSPAN cluster is drawn. Transition vectors that connect different year relevés of the same quadrat are drawn to indicate shifts of quadrats through the diagram. Similarity in vegetation changes in different quadrats can be deduced from the direction of the transition vectors.

To relate vegetation changes to the forest structure of the core area, FOREYE computations of the amounts of direct and diffuse light are made for the 50 adjacent relevés of the herbaceous transect area. The amounts of direct and diffuse light are used as an environmental factor in the canonical correspondence analysis (Ter Braak 1986, 1987).

6.3 Aerial View Simulation

Mapping of tree species in the site area can be done through processing of digitized aerial photographs. The forest model can be used as a ground reference for identification of tree species on remote sensing images. An aerial view can be reconstructed from the data collected in the core area or the woody transect area. The height of the upper crown surface is computed for each pixel in a grid. Pixel size of the reconstructed aerial view can be transformed to that of a digital remote sensing image that covers the plot. For all tree crowns that cover the same pixel the heights of the crown surfaces are compared. The height of the highest crown surface in the pixel and its additional tree characteristics are stored.

The result of this procedure is an orthographic parallel projected grid of highest tree crowns. Because this computed orthographic projection has to be collated with the aerial photograph, which is a central projection, transformation of the first to a central projection is necessary. Thus, each pixel can be assigned to the data collected on the individual tree that was measured and classified in the field. The corresponding pixels of the remote sensing image and the transformed aerial view serve as a large training set of pixels for interpretation of all pixels beyond the plot (Schowengerdt 1983).

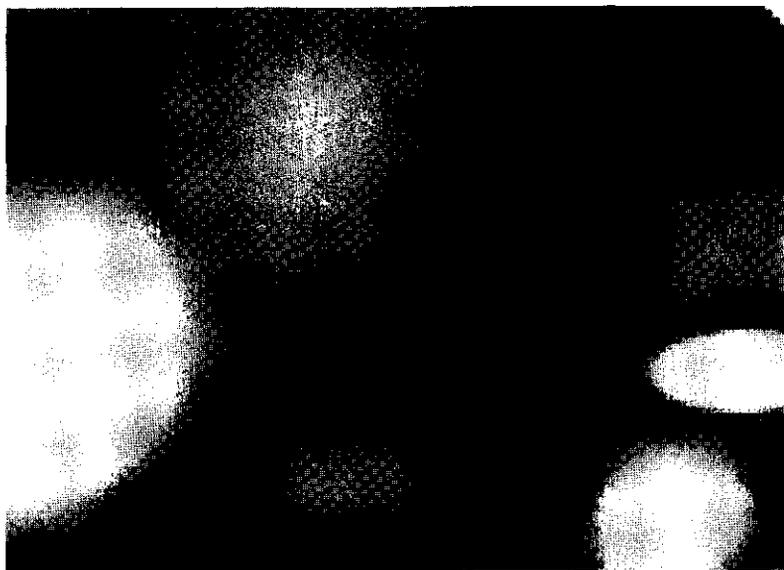


Fig. 6.3. Upper canopy height computed with the CANOPIX program. Pixels of increasing canopy height are depicted in increasing grey-value.

6.3.1 The Program CANOPIX

A procedure to compute the crown surface height at a given point, similar to the one used in the program FOREYE, is followed in the program CANOPIX (Bijlsma 1989). Because of computation of the canopy height in a rectangular grid, forest structure must be scanned in parallel vertical planes at equal distances. The further procedure is identical to the scanning procedure in the program FOREYE. Again trees are scanned individually. In each vertical plane at the line of intersection (AB) with the periphery plane the points (P) are arranged at equal distances. A vector radius TP again intersects a periphery ellipse in point R. The crown surface height is determined by the point of intersection (I) between the perpendicular line PI and the vertical crown curve RT (Fig. 6.1a). Contrarily to FOREYE, the crown surface heights of all trees in each one pixel are compared. The highest crown surface per pixel is stored. Finally, for every pixel the tree number, its crown surface height, the tree species, the inner crown cover and vitality indices of the tree concerned are stored. Figure 6.3 shows the result of computation of the upper canopy height. Pixel height is shown as an increasing grey-value.

6.4 Forest Reconstruction with Tree Ring Data

Tree ring analysis can be used for reconstruction of individual tree growth in uneven-aged forests in climates with a growth-arresting season. Analysis of diameter growth of uneven-aged trees in an irregular spatial arrangement results in a complex data set that can hardly be put in such an order as to communicate it to readers. The tree model developed in this study can be used for visualization of such complex data sets.

6.4.1 The Program GROWRING

Tree diameters for any year can be reconstructed using tree ring cores. For depicting the development of an individual tree, its dimensions at any given time, e.g. crown surface, height of the top, periphery and crown base values are calculated from the reconstructed tree diameter increment. This can be done using regression equations that link the present tree dimensions to tree diameter, as measured in the core area (Fig. 6.4).

Uprooting or die-off of present standing or lying dead trees can be dated with growth reactions of surrounding trees. Age determination of trees that grow on mounds of uprootings sets for a minimum time period since uprooting (Oliver and Stephens 1977; Zeide 1981). For a better impression of past forest structure, dead trees can be "re-erected" and their dimensions in further reconstruction can be worked out proportionately to trees of about the same size in a comparable position.

Calculated, reconstructed dimensions of all trees in the sample plot are for each year written to year-files. A sequence of plotted year-files visualizes, from the diameter increment, the growth of the trees and enables interpretation of competition between trees due to their positions and dimensions.

This way of depicting tree and stand development in the past still has some restrictions and therefore the images that are created should as yet be interpreted with caution:

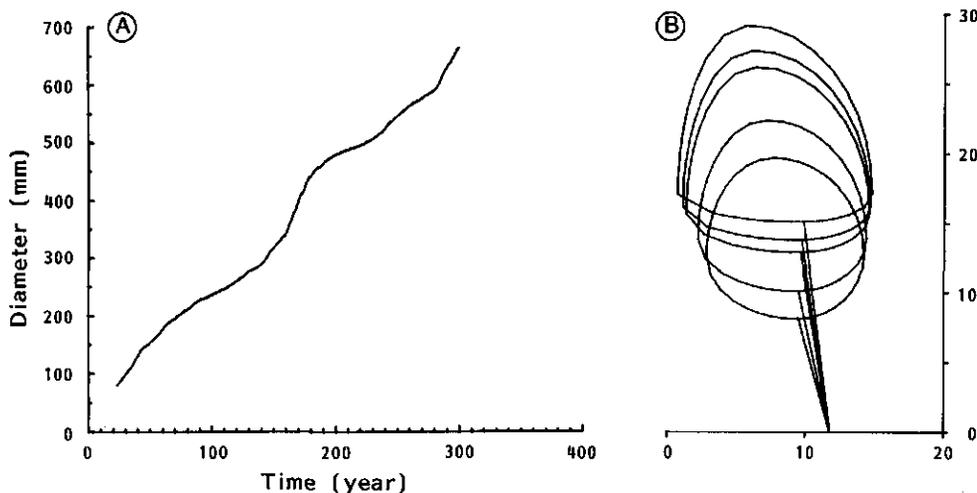


Fig. 6.4. A Diameter growth of a beech (*Fagus sylvatica*) in Fontainebleau. **B** Reconstructed tree dimensions at sequential time intervals for the same beech. Height of the crown top, periphery and base and the crown projection surface have been computed with regression equations

- Regressions of present tree dimensions with tree diameter are based on measurements of trees thicker than 5 cm at breast height. These regressions can be used to determine dimensions of trees with reconstructed diameters of more than 5 cm breast height. In the case of reconstructed diameters less than 5 cm, tree dimensions should be computed deviantly. Here a linear decrease proportional to diameter, from the regression value for 5 cm Dbh on to the origin, is used for all tree dimensions.

- The height at which the samples of tree rings are taken restricts the phase of development of a tree that can be traced back. Because trees were sampled at breast height, they appear in the retrospective view at the moment they surmount the height of 1.30 m and already have a certain crown dimension.

- Crushing of part of the tree crown by the fall of another tree, or a gradual die off and shrinking of a tree crown is not included so far. For a reconstruction of a tree crown, before the moment it became damaged or its dimensions started to decline because of senescence, its original crown dimensions have to be deduced from regressions. Therefore, in the model, senescent or damaged trees that lost part of their original crown will be assigned to an initial crown size according to the diameter regressions. The moment of starting decline can be retraced from the tree rings and can sometimes be associated with extreme weather conditions.

Only trees for which the tree rings could be sampled can be traced back and depicted in the retrospective view of forest structure.

- Trees of which no trace is left (died and completely decayed) may at some time in the past have dominated the forest canopy. This is realistic because trees moulder away after some decades (Koop 1981). In flooded forests, recently fallen trees may have drifted away. On these sites even the relatively "hard memory" of an uprooting mound and pit, that normally remains visible for centuries, is leveled and washed away within a few years.

- Rings in the heart of the tree can often not be measured. Trees may rot at the core and become hollow, the wood at the heart may be too soft to be sampled with the borer, or the year rings have become unreadable. Alternatively, tree rings in the heart of the tree may not have been measured because the heart was missed in the sampling. In such cases data on the inner tree rings, that give information about the absolute age and youth growth of the tree, are missing. In our reconstructed, retrospective view these trees "disappear" for further reconstruction purposes beyond the year of their last measurable tree ring.

Part C Examples of System Application

In part C of this study examples are given of the applications and use of the information system. Although time series are not yet long enough to show long-term and thereby large shifts in forest mosaics or species composition, the examples given may demonstrate the potential of the methods for such applications as well. The examples are presented in the following chapters, in a sequence from (1) retrospective study, an attempt to reconstruct long-term forest dynamics, first cyclic and second successional dynamics (Chaps. 7 and 8); (2) monitoring study, using time series of sequential forest inventories (Chap. 9); (3) comparative study, analyzing variables across many forest objects (Chap. 10) and; (4) simulation study, simulating impacts of trees upon each other and upon herbaceous vegetation and tree species regeneration (Chap. 11).

Reconstruction of Long-Term Cyclic Forest Dynamics

In this chapter, reconstruction of long-term forest dynamics will be demonstrated, using the data collected in some of the forest objects under study that have a relatively long history of spontaneous development with minor human interference. Two forest reserves have been selected as examples of reconstruction of cyclic developments in European lowland forest. A third forest gives an example of deviation of cyclic processes under grazing pressure. Present forest structure and species composition, tree measures and architectural codes collected for the individual trees in the core area (Chap. 3) in combination with historical maps and written documents descriptions of former use (Chap. 3) can explain much of its developmental history. Tree rings can be used to reconstruct forest growth. Dead wood and traces of uprooting (Chaps. 3 and 4) sometimes give an indication of forest dynamics that dates even further back than the tree ring information.

7.1 Cyclic Forest Dynamics in the 600 Years' Unexploited Beech Forest of Fontainebleau (France)

The strict reserve of la Tillaie (34 ha) is part of the 17,000-ha state forest of Fontainebleau. The reserve is situated on a plateau, 135-140 m above sea level, in a hilly country that geologically belongs to the basin of Paris. The climate is of a maritime type with some continental influences. The subsoil of limestone is covered with a sand layer of 0.3 to 2.0 m thick. Dependent on this depth, different soil types have developed, each type carrying its own characteristic vegetation (Lemée 1978).

In the thin sand cover, up to 80 cm, calcareous brown earths occur with a woodmelick-beech forest (*Melico-Fagetum*) according to Trautmann (1972) and Van der Werf (1989). The *Melico-Fagetum* is a pure beech forest (*Fagus sylvatica*) in which *Acer campestre* and *Fraxinus excelsior* occur in small numbers in regeneration groups under canopy gaps. The herbaceous layer is dominated by *Brachypodium sylvaticum*, *Melica uniflora*, *Festuca heterophylla* or *Ruscus aculeatus*. Under canopy gaps *Calamagrostis epigejos*, *Brachypodium pinnatum* and *Rubus fruticosus* agg. occur.

In deeper sandy profiles, leaching of iron and humus led to the development of a podsol. Vegetation on these podsols can be characterized as a sessile oak-beech forest (*Fago-Quercetum*). Besides *Fagus sylvatica*, a small number of *Quercus petraea* can be found. A thin shrub layer is formed by *Ilex aquifolium*. Characteristic species for the thin herbaceous layer are *Deschampsia flexuosa*, *Carex pilulifera* and *Lonicera perichymentum*, while characteristic species of the *Melico-Fagetum* are absent. Clearings are mostly overgrown by a dense vegetation of *Pteridium aquilinum*.

In 1982 two core areas (70 x 140 m) were charted. Core area I represents the *Melico-Fagetum* and core area II the *Fago-Quercetum*. The regeneration mosaic shifts

over 15 years could be retraced by comparison with tree-crown mapping (scale 1:1000) by Bouchon et al. (1973) and were published by Van Baren and Hilgen (1984) and Koop and Hilgen (1987). In 1987, when herbaceous transect area relevés were reassessed, tree rings were sampled in the woody transect area, together with a central square area measuring 40 x 40 m. One hundred trees with Dbh > 10 cm were cored twice at breast height. The results were processed as described in Chap. 6.

7.1.1 Historical Analysis

Unwritten Data

Pollen analyses (Guillet and Robin 1972; Lemée 1981) had revealed that since the eighth century the forest area developed from an open grassy oak forest to the present almost pure beech forest. ¹⁴C Dating and species identification from charcoal remnants by Jaquiot et al. (1973) confirmed that La Tillaie was an exploited oak forest during the eighth century. The name la Tillaie refers to *Tilia*. At the present only few *Tilia cordata* trees have survived and pollen analysis reveals that since the eighth century *Tilia* has played only a minor role in species composition of the forest.

Clear-Cut in 1372

In the fourteenth century, the forests of Fontainebleau became part of the heritage of the king's widow. Part of the forest was cut as a source of income (Tendron 1983) including the forest compartment named "Coup des Reines" near the present forest reserve. A document of 1372 mentions the sale of high trees in the compartment of la Tillaie, probably for building purposes in Paris (Grand-Mesnil 1982). In the forest of Fontainebleau old broadleaved high forests have been preserved as a royal hunting field and to provide a scene of ancient woodland around the palace of Fontainebleau. As compensation for the damage caused by the high numbers of deer, local inhabitants gained the right of cattle grazing and collection of dead wood and litter (Tendron 1983).

Management Plan of 1664

The first management plan (Barillon d'Amoncourt, 1664) describes all forest compartments and their subdivisions in great detail. The forest sites "Petite Tillas" and "Grande Tillas" described in this plan can be traced on the map of Mathis (1725). The individual subdivisions of both forest sites can be located quite accurately because embracing forest sites, adjacent roads, the size of areas and sometimes soil conditions are mentioned. As can be seen from Figure 7.1, the present forest reserve is covered by the subdivision D and E of "Petite Tillas" and subdivision B of "Grande Tillas". Plot I is covered by subdivision B and plot II by subdivision E. Part of the management plan (Barillon d'Amoncourt 1664) concerning both plots has been translated below.

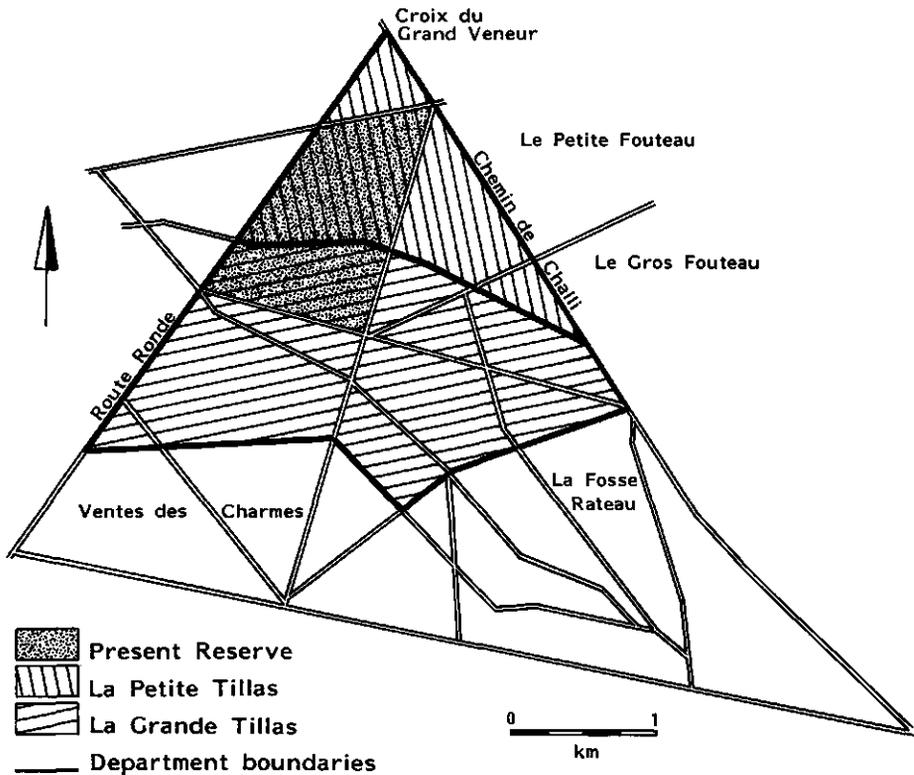


Fig. 7.1. Topography of La Tillaie after the map of Mathis (1725) with allocation of the forest sites "Grande Tillas" and "Petite Tillas" and their subdivisions according to the descriptions of Barillon d'Amoncourt (1664)

"Grande Tillas

Embraced on one side by La Petite Tillas and on the other by La Ventes des Charmes, on one end by La Route Ronde and at the other by La Montagne Pierreuse and Fosse Ratault. Containing 140 arpents (one arpent = $1/2$ to $1/3$ ha) 46 perches (one perch = 34 m^2) to wit:

B 129 arpents 68 perches of an old high forest of old beeches of 200 to 300 years old, thick and heavy, oaks and some lime trees of the same age and old wide-spread standard oaks of 300 to 350 years old, underneath an abundance of beeches and some lime trees of different age from 35 to 42 year to 200 years. Some parts are rather open because of the fall of old beeches and some wind-thrown oaks. The area adjacent to La Route Ronde is the best and with many beautiful oaks on the best soils. Concerning the second part (subdivision B) that regenerates, although very irregular, it will maintain itself in this way, and one can for forest aesthetical reasons dispense with any cutting for a long time.

Petite Tillas

On one side Le Chemin Chailly, on the other La Grande Tillas, on one end La Fosse Ratault and on the other La Route Ronde. Containing 94 arpents and 80 perches to wit:

D 12 arpents 64 perches along La Route Ronde badly occupied by oak as well as hornbeam of 150 years old, the whole undergrown with plants of hornbeam and beech.

E 62 arpents 47 perches of oak of 100 to 150 years and 200 years old on a good soil although gravelly where the beech is not able to succeed, because it sends its roots between two soil layers and is blown down by the big storms, but underneath well occupied by the same species beech of different age, the youngest succeeding the old, the open places being filled up quickly. It is not necessary for a long time to plan any felling in this part of the forest, that can always maintain itself entirely while remaining well occupied."

Management Plan of 1716

Because of fast forest degeneration, the second management plan (De la Faluere 1716) prescribes artificial rejuvenation of open stands by planting and sowing. La Tillaie is described as a collapsing forest with many dying trees and open spaces. The oldest beeches in la Tillaie, however, date from about 1600, and a continuous tree ring increment of old oaks since the 16th century (Lemée 1966) confirms the existence of La Tillaie as an ancient woodland, far older than the second management plan. With Tendron (1983), we may conclude that the second management plan was never carried out in la Tillaie. Together with some other old stands, la Tillaie was last cut in 1372 and has developed spontaneously ever since.

1853 Establishment of Strict Forest Reserves

Many paintings of the school of Barbizon depict the forest of Fontainebleau in the 19th century as a high forest (Sillevis and Kraan 1986). In 1837 painters and tourists rose against planned cuttings for rejuvenation of the oldest stands of Fontainebleau including la Tillaie (Tendron 1983). Strict forest reserves were established already in 1853 for aesthetic reasons. Ever since, wood harvesting has been prohibited. These forests belong to the oldest well-protected nature reserves in Europe. Lacordaine and Lescuyer (1853) describe the old stands in la Tillaie as follows:

"High forest of beech and oak with some hornbeam 100 to 300 years old, some trees even older, forming a very beautiful massif, very high and still healthy and complete especially in subdivision 171 (the present reserve la Tillaie). One also meets open parts and places where the stand does not seem to be older than 100 years. In the open and badly occupied places, seedlings seldom exist of the same age that could be conserved in the case of a regeneration cut."

More generally, Lacordaine and Lescuyer describe the stands of the reserves from a forester's point of view as:

"The old high forests have unfortunately all reached their period of decline. Even in the most beautiful parts most of the trees show signs of weakening. Generally speaking the greater part of the trees have partly dead crowns and are attacked by a rotting process

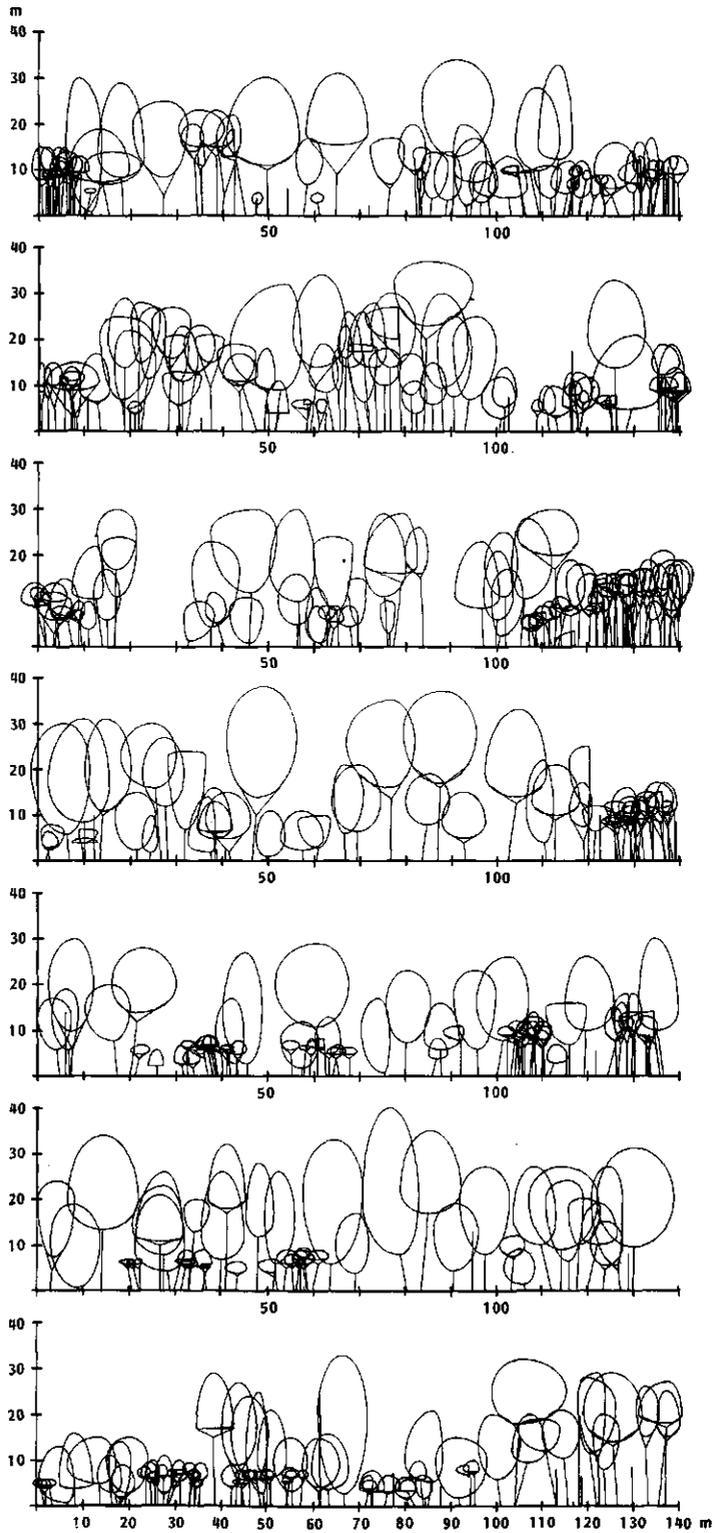


Fig. 7.6.

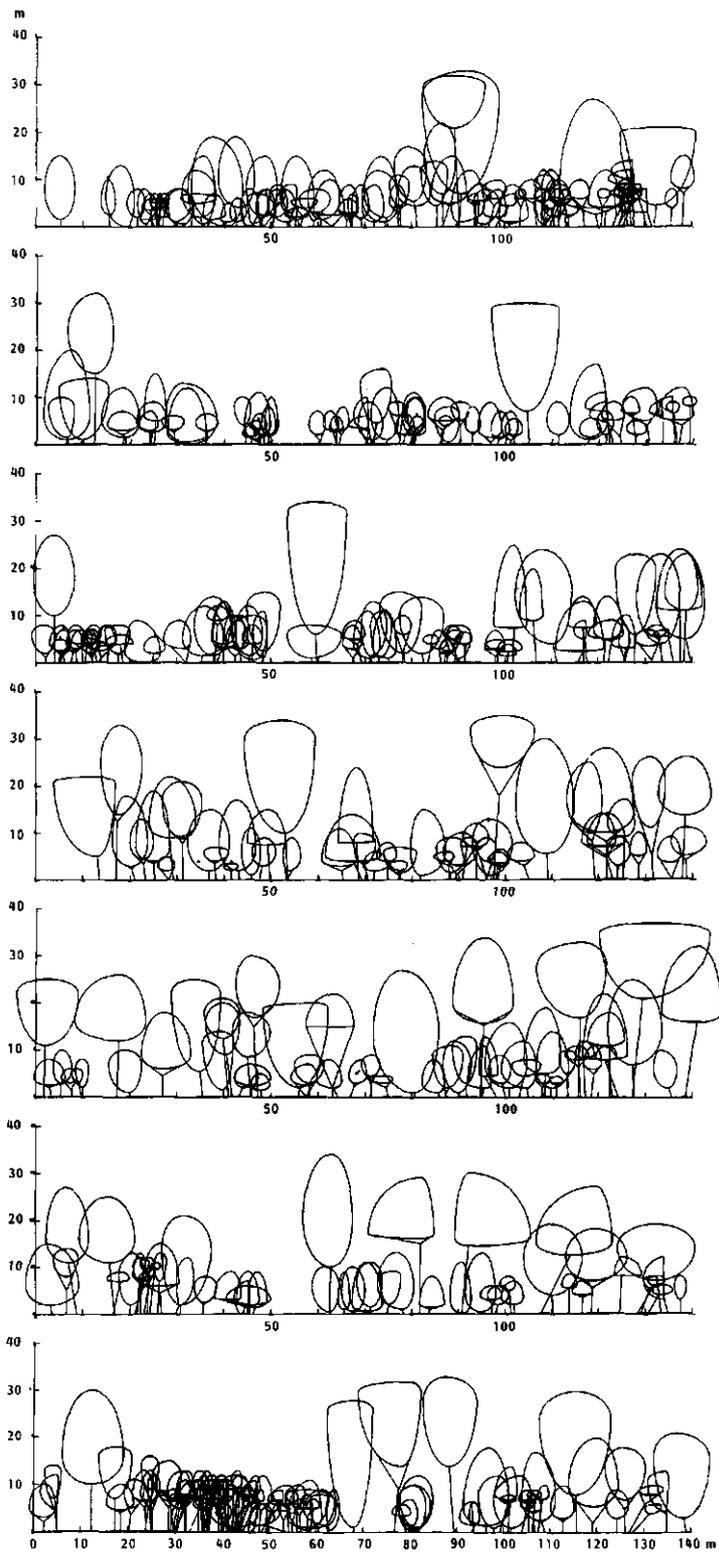


Fig. 7.7.

←
Fig. 7.7. Side views of seven adjacent 10 x 140 m transects through the core area II in La Tillaie (Fontainebleau) plotted with the program ARBOPLOT

The network pattern is most pronounced in slowly fragmentating biostatic phases. Against the background of the spread of regeneration waves in time and space, of the fact that after 100 years height differences have been bridged between trees of both generations and that the biostatic phase may last for 200 years, it seems likely that the above described network pattern regeneration may have a continuous nature in time.

FONTAINEBLEAU I

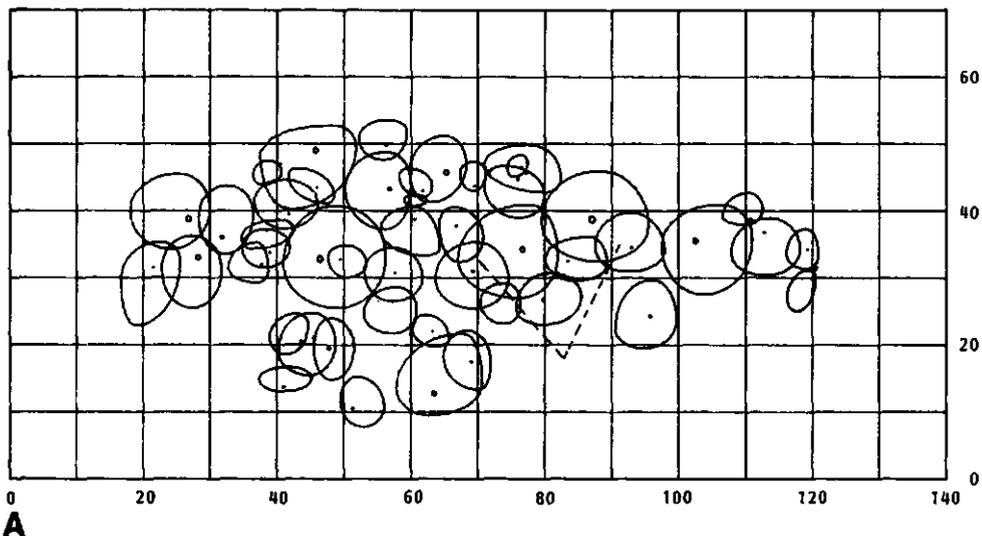


Fig. 7.8. A Computer-plotted ground plan drawing of the area sampled for tree rings in the core area I in La Tillaie (Fontainebleau). B Photographs (June 1986) of the sample area with little regeneration under the first generation beech. The position the photographs were taken is indicated in A

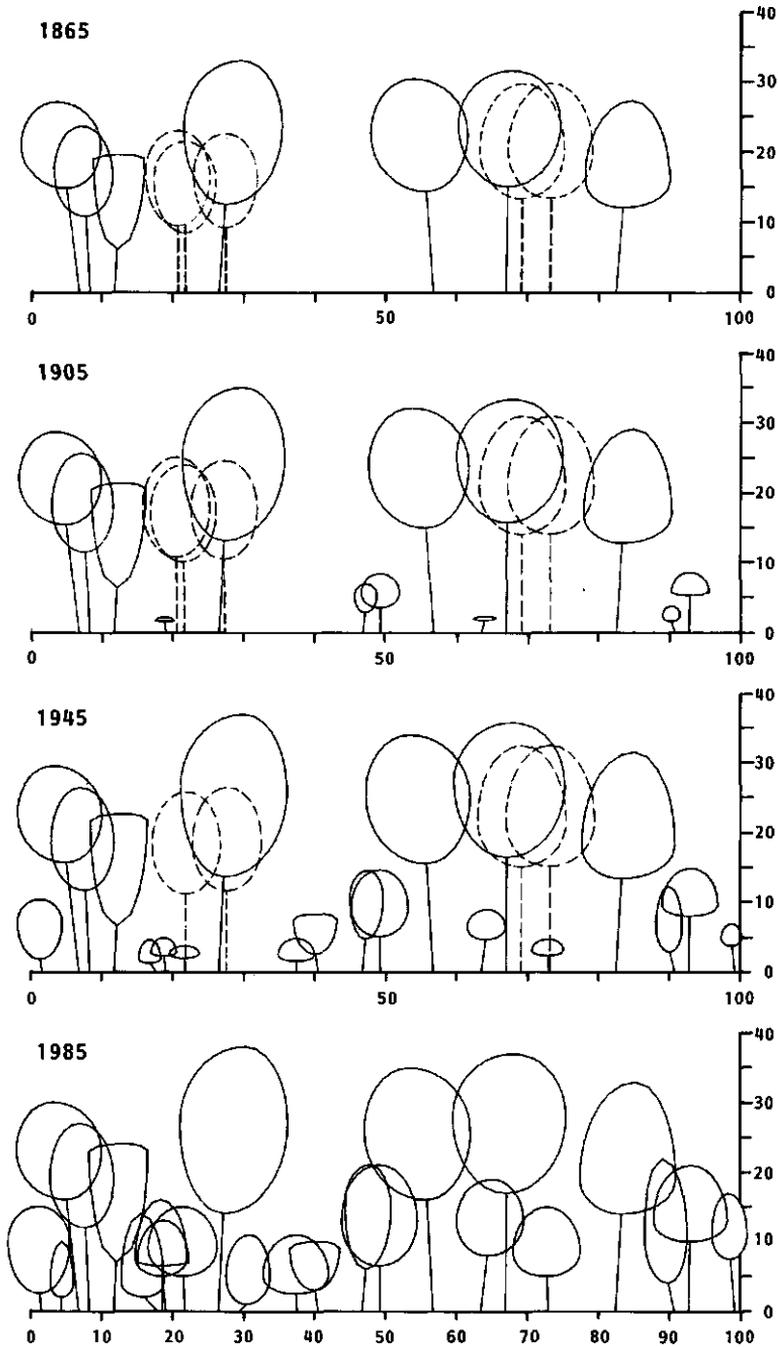


Fig. 7.9. Reconstructed forest development using the program GROWRING (see Chap. 6.5). Woody transect area in Core area I of La Tillaie (Fontainebleau). Four pictures at 40 years' intervals have been cut out of the cartoon film that covers 300 years. *Dashed* trees have been reconstructed from tree bodies on the forest floor

7.1.4 Forest Growth Reconstruction in a *Melico-Fagetum* (Core area I)

The traces of uprooting in the northwest of the sample block and east of the transect at 95 m can be dated with the trees that grow on the mound (Figs. 7.8 and 7.9). These trees established themselves in 1880 and 1888 respectively. Trees in the direct surroundings of the uprooting became established in 1875 and 1896 and neighbouring old trees show an increased growth rate after 1880. Probably, these uprootings and the two others in the centre of the core area are of the same age, although the trees in the canopy gaps and on the mounds are not exactly of the same age. It is likely, even though the uprootings occurred simultaneously, that not all trees became established immediately after uprooting nor did they all surmount 1.3 m, at which the tree was cored, in the same year. The tree just west of the uprooted tree in the centre of the core area shows no growth reaction although it must have been released. This could be explained by sudden exposure or damage by the fall of its neighbouring tree. It is likely that these uprootings and other dying trees (which left no trace) triggered the regeneration wave starting in 1850 or released saplings that already waited underneath the canopy.

Three recent uprootings in the central woody transect area, of which the tree bodies still remain, can be dated back to 1940 and 1955 by pin-pointing the growth reaction of surrounding trees. Uprooted trees were shown to have more effect on the growth of surrounding trees than broken-off trees. Therefore the break-off of a tree cannot be dated with the same accuracy as uprootings. Probably the trees had already died when they broke down. A release caused by a tree dying upright is a much more gradual one than in the case of uprooting. One of the trees that broke off can be dated back to about 1940 and two to about 1955.

7.1.5 Forest Growth Reconstruction in a *Fago-Quercetum* (Core area II)

In the woody transect area, two regeneration units can be distinguished (Figs. 7.10 and 7.11, see also Fig. 7.5). The first, at 20-50 m, developed from uneven-aged regeneration of *F. sylvatica*, starting in the southern edge of the canopy gap in 1869. The other trees dominating this unit established themselves during the period 1883-1892. The earlier appearance of trees in the southern edge of the gap may be due to earlier tree establishment and reaching 1.30 m height more quickly because of better growth. Later establishment and less vigorous growth in the northern edge of the gap can be explained by the direct sun irradiance that can lead to desiccation (Pontailier 1979). Two trees now suppressed by the others became established latest, i.e. in 1898 and 1900. From the centre of the regeneration unit to its periphery, tree growth has been less and thus a lens-shaped regeneration unit developed. It seems that since establishment of the unit it had hardly been damaged by the fall of older trees.

FONTAINEBLEAU II

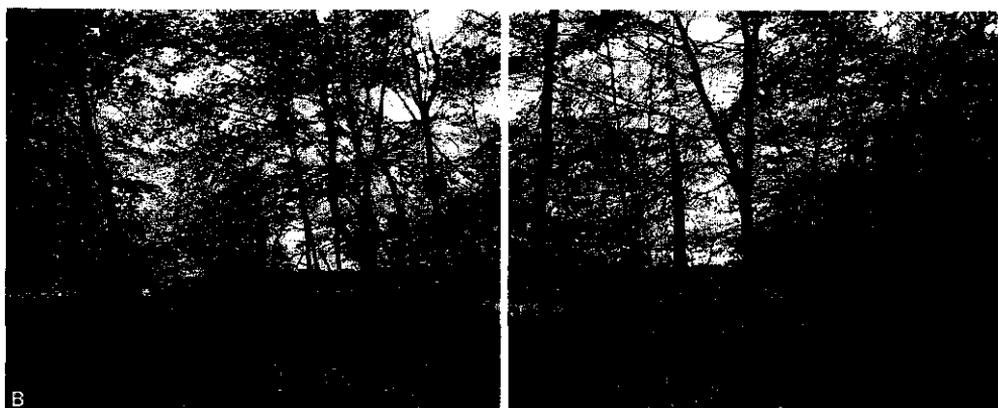
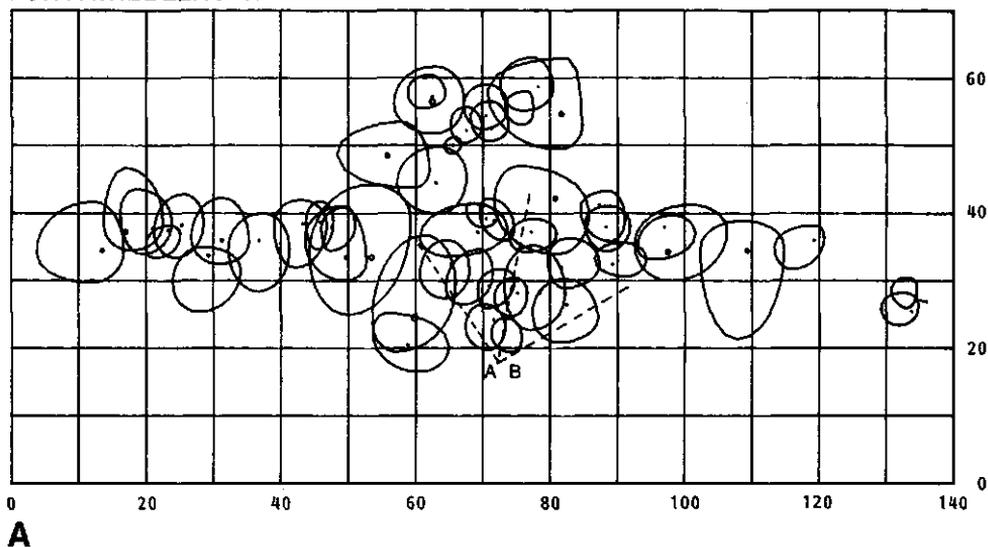


Fig. 7.10. A Computer-plotted ground plan drawing of the area sampled for tree rings in the core area II in La Tillaie (Fontainebleau). B Photographs (June 1986) of the regeneration unit in the centre of the core area, the position the photographs was taken is indicated in A

The origin of the canopy gap, below which this regeneration unit developed, is indicated by some slight circular depressions about 50 cm in diameter. These depressions could be the result of decaying stumps of trees that died standing. As the tree base and the last roots decayed, the soil surface caved in for about 20 cm. The ongoing process has been observed elsewhere in Denny Wood (New Forest, England) in beech trees that died because of the 1976 drought. Four trees in the centre of the regeneration unit show traces of accelerated growth since 1940, which might have been caused by the uprooting of three trees west of the transect. Of one of these fallen trees, a beech, some wood remains in stage 5 and 4 of decay, which fits in well with the estimate of 40 years before

total decay of big beech trees (Koop 1981). The mound-and-pit micro-relief of the uprootings has flattened to stage 3 (see Chap. 3).

The two oldest trees in the second regeneration unit in the centre of the core area (Fig. 7.10) date from 1883. Other trees became established in 1886, two in 1890 and still others in 1894, 1899, 1900, 1913, 1914 and 1918. In the period 1943-1952 some trees became established in the north-eastern edge of the regeneration unit. This probably

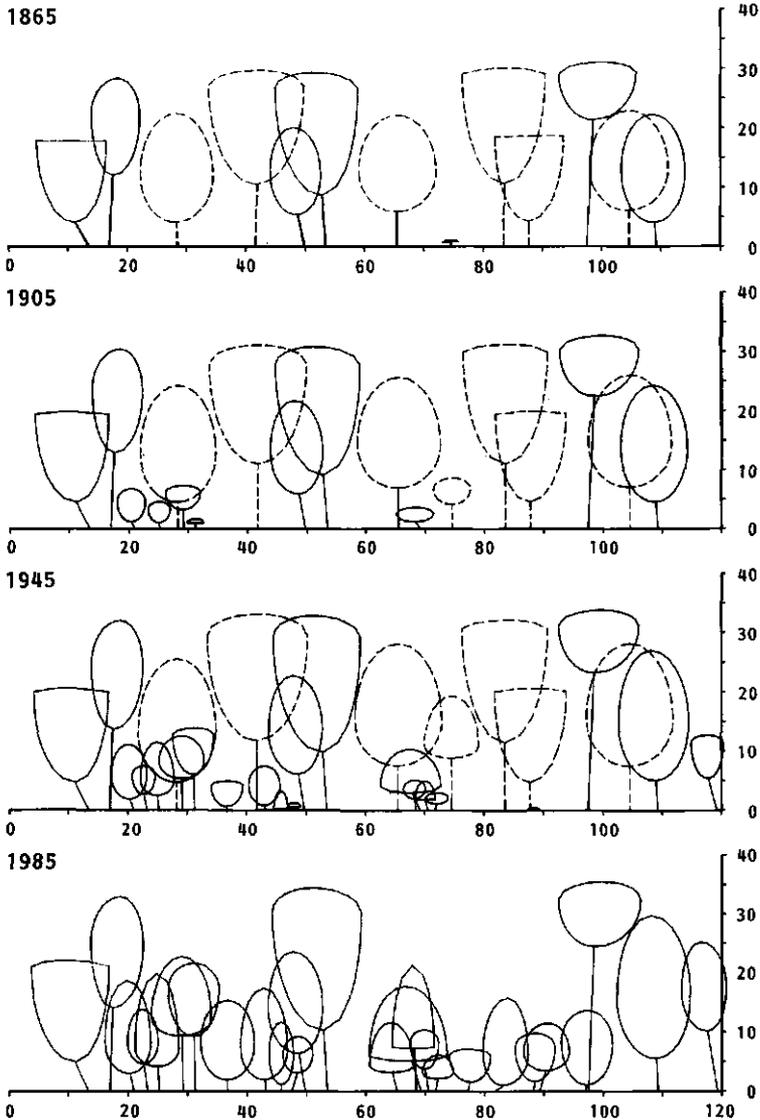


Fig. 7.11. Reconstructed forest development using the program GROWING (see Chap. 6.5). Woody transect area in Core area II of La Tillaie (Fontainebleau). Four pictures at 40 years' intervals have been cut out of the cartoon film that covers 300 years. *Dashed* trees have been reconstructed from tree bodies on the forest floor

happened because of the death of the biggest tree in the regeneration group and some uprootings east of the transect. The origin of the canopy gap is only indicated by one slight circular depression and one trace of uprooting (stage 4). Other depressions or traces of uprooting may have been overlooked under the dense crowns of fallen trees. This regeneration unit suffered from damage caused by falling trees during and shortly after the storms of 1967, as is documented by maps (Bouchon et al. 1973). Where two crowns of big beeches struck the ground, part of the older trees of the regeneration unit probably was demolished. One of the trees became severely damaged, but survived. The unit has been split up into two smaller ones. In the western part of the former regeneration unit tree growth was least vigorous and trees became overgrown by others.

During the storms of 1967 and in the following years, more than ten big trees in the transect and its direct surroundings were uprooted. As a reaction to their release, the surviving trees in both regeneration units show an increased diameter increment after 1967. The old canopy trees also reacted to the release, except for some of the oldest, already senescent, trees. Along the fallen logs of uprooted trees in 1967 younger beeches became established. They were too thin to be bored for tree rings. The up to 3-m-long etiolated sprouts of *Pteridium aquilinum* found in 1980 give evidence that *P. aquilinum* must have occupied part of the canopy gap after the storm of 1967 and became outshaded by the spreading tree crowns of the beeches. Probably because of the shadow cast by the *P. aquilinum* vegetation, the already existing regeneration and the piled-up uprooted tree stems and crowns, no other more light-demanding tree species became established. In its northern end, the transect contains a small part of a third regeneration unit.

7.1.6 Mosaic Development During Regeneration After Management

In the past, the forest reserves have been influenced to some extent by forest grazing by deer and cattle. Cattle grazing lasted until the start of the 20th century. The number of cattle reached its summit under Louis XIV (1661-1715). Apparently this period of high grazing pressure did not hinder the establishment of the second generation of trees (Fig. 7.12). Allowing the inhabitants to collect dead wood and litter was practised until the 19th century, obviously without have caused great damage to the forest (Tendron 1983). With Tendron (1983) we can conclude that the forest reserves developed more or less undisturbed by human interference, at least without cuttings, since 1372. The 200- to 300-year-old trees described by Barrilon d'Amoncourt (1664) must originate from the period shortly after the clear-cut of 1372. The beeches may have spontaneously invaded a pioneer oak forest somewhat later and therefore may have been younger.

Barrilon d'Amoncourt (1664) described the uprooting of beech on the podsol in Petite Tillas (core area II) caused by some heavy storm shortly before 1664, which the oaks survived. He concluded that the beech was not going to survive, which allows the conclusion that the storm must have felled the majority of the beeches. However, he mentioned that second-generation beech became established at the same time. This partial decline of the forest, with oaks surviving, was followed by beech regeneration. The establishment of this tree generation can be dated with tree ring analyses to between 1609 and 1723. Possibly the oldest beeches of this tree generation may have survived the storm as young trees under the canopy of oak.

La Grande Tillas (core area I) is described in 1664 as having a higher portion of beech, which might be explained by a site quality that favours beech in competition with

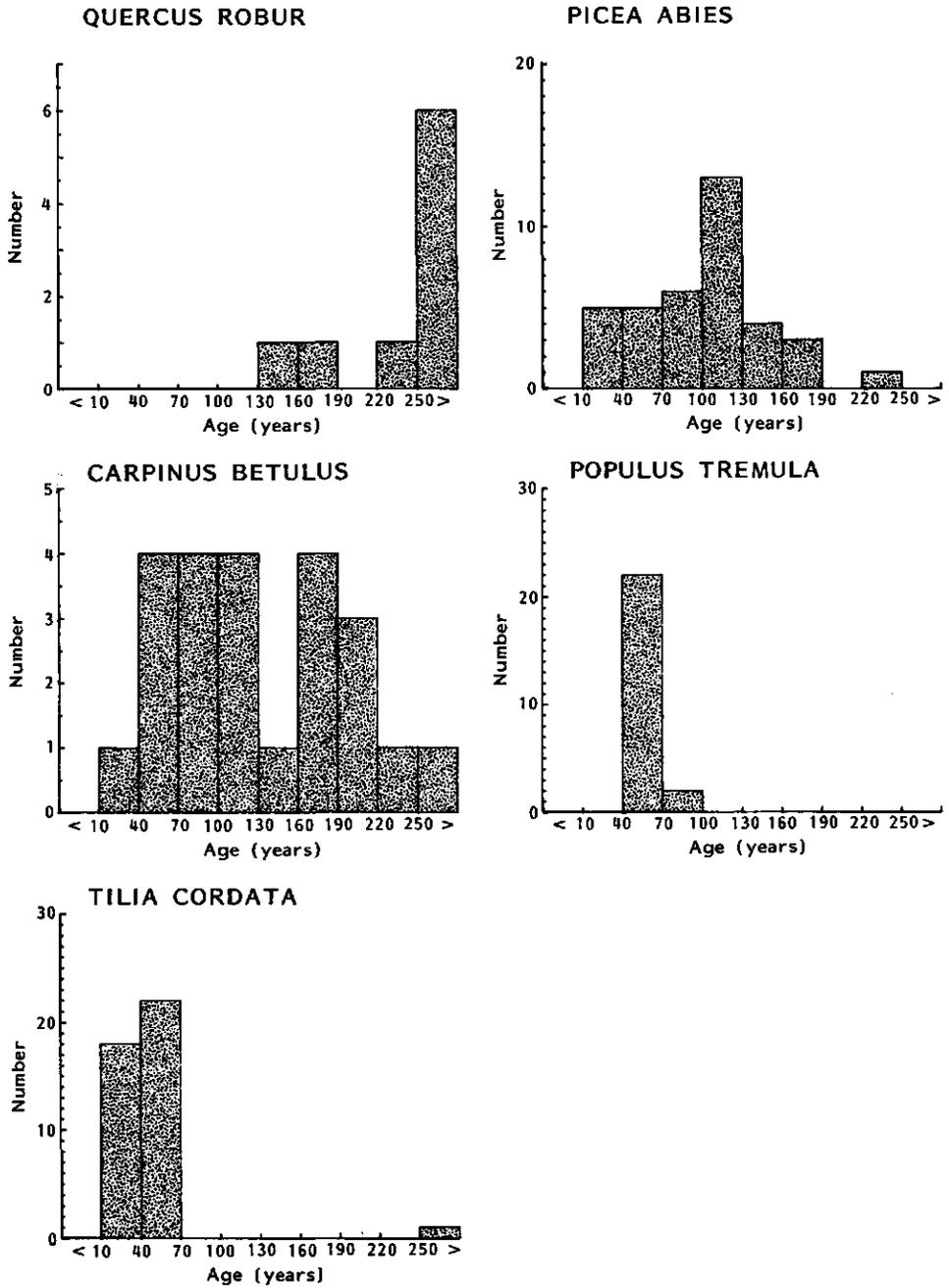


Fig. 7.13. Age distribution diagrams of *Quercus robur*, *Picea abies*, *Carpinus betulus*, *Populus tremula* and *Tilia cordata*

7.2 Cyclic Forest Dynamics in Unexploited Lime-Hornbeam Forest in Bialowieza (Poland)

The National Park of Bialowieza is part of the 1250 km² Bialowieza forest on Polish and Russian territory situated between 52°30' and 52°57' northern latitude and 23°20' and 24°20' eastern longitude. The climate is of a continental subboreal type, with long snow cover in winter of average 92 days and a relatively short vegetation period of 185 days. Mean annual precipitation amounts 641 mm (Falinski 1986).

In 1977, four 1-ha plots were established in the *Tilio-Carpinetum*, the vegetation type most closely related to the West-European *Stellario-Carpinetum* (Derkman and Koop 1977). The hectare blocks established in 1977 were mapped for developmental phases. They showed a small-scale regeneration mosaic. Trees were measured in circular sample plots within the hectare blocks. A clear relation between tree density and mean tree diameter was found in the sample plots. Differences in tree densities in thicket phases could be distinguished between released thicket phases that established under a closed canopy and newly established thicket phases after canopy gap formation. Regeneration of *Quercus robur* only was found in one plot in a bigger gap. Regeneration of *Ulmus glabra* preferentially occurred in dense *Urtica dioica* vegetation. An 200-year-old clear-cut could still be recognized in present forest structure. A wavelike regeneration of *C. betulus* and *T. cordata* followed the pioneer stand of *P. tremula*, *B. pendula*, *Q. robur* and *P. abies* after decay (Koop 1986a).

In 1982 and 1987, two of these plots in compartment 256 and 342 were reassessed according the methods described in Part A. The core area in dep. 342 coincides with the I.B.P. area measured earlier by Falinski (1966). In 1984, vegetation mapping in both core areas was carried out by Van de Bos (1984). Tree ring samples of all trees with a Dbh > 10 cm in a central 40 x 50 m block in the core area in compartment 256 were taken in 1987 by Bevers and Blokland. Besides, all *Populus tremula* trees in the rest of the core area were bored. The core area of compartment 256 discussed here belongs to a *Tilio-Carpinetum* (Rijken 1976). The parent material is of glacial origin. The soil conditions of the *Tilio-Carpinetum* are described by Falinski (1986). The typical brown earths are differentiated by gleying and lessivage, resulting in pseudogley soils and pseudopodsols. The core area is situated on a pseudogley soil in sands upon boulder clay. In a deeper sand cover a pseudopodsol is found in the northern edge of the core area carrying a more acid local *Trientalis* variant of the *Tilio-Carpinetum*.

7.2.1 Historical Analysis

After it became came under Polish rule as a result of union of the Great Duchy of Lithuania in the fifteenth century, the Bialowieza forest was a hunting field of the Lithuanian dukes and Polish kings. There was a special guard to watch over the forest. Exploitation for timber remained backward because the Baltic forests were more open for transport overseas. After the third partition of Poland in 1795, the forest passed under Russian rule and was not as well protected by law as in the three centuries before. The forest became exploited for timber and the stock of game diminished. A great fire in 1811, and a year later the invasion of Napoleon's troops devastated the forest. Successive surveys in the period 1861-1890 indicate the continuous shrinking of the forest area. After 1893 the Bialowieza forest was ranked as a private hunting-field of the Russian Czar, and a new castle was built in Bialowieza. Exploitation for timber was

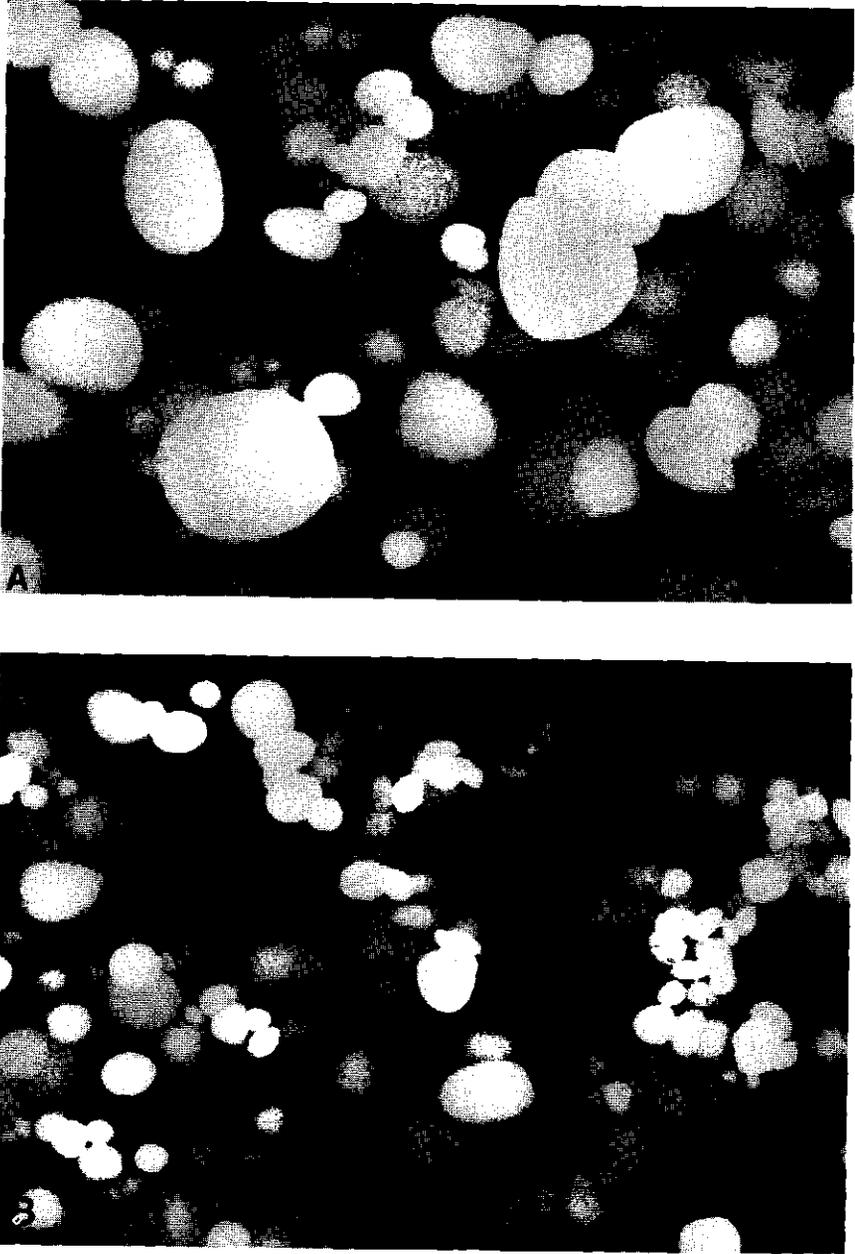


Fig. 7.14. Canopy height computed from the forest model in the core area compartment 256 in the National Park of Bialowieza (Poland). **A** Canopy height of all trees, showing a fragmented canopy of emergent trees. **B** Canopy height of potential trees, clearly showing the pattern of the network of aggrading regeneration units surrounding the emerging trees

prohibited and great quantities of game were let free, which caused an extremely high stock. During the period 1892-1915 the forest actually acted as a game-breeding park, which resulted in destruction of the forest undergrowth, debarking of young trees and inhibition of rejuvenation of most broadleaved trees. As a result, *Picea abies* spread under the canopy of deciduous trees in nearly all habitats (Falinski 1988). Maps of Karvec (1903) and of the forest service of 1958 (both in Falinski 1986) show the increase of stands with prevailing spruce (*Picea abies*). During the German occupation in World War I, hunting without control decimated the game, while 5,000,000 m³ of wood were cut and a network of narrow gauge lines was built for removing it (Falinski 1986). Gruber and Voit (1917) and Escherich (1928) write about fires in the forest lighted by farmers and Russian convicts. Most fires started on clearings with *Picea* pruning rests. After Poland became independent in 1921, the central part (47 km²) of the forest was designated as the oldest Polish National Park. During World War II, Bialowieza was ranked as a hunting area. In 1947 the Bialowieza National Park statute was finally approved.

7.2.2 Tree Age Distribution

Of the eight *Quercus robur* trees sampled for tree rings, three were established in the seventeenth century, three in the eighteenth and two in the nineteenth century. In competition with *C. betulus* and *T. cordata*, *Q. robur* has little chance in this core area. In another core area (compartment 371) in a bigger gap the species has established itself successfully.

Only few live *P. abies* trees older than 120 years can be found. *P. abies* reinforced its predominant position by a regeneration wave during the period 1874-1906 (Fig. 7.13). This increase of *P. abies* was clearly described by Paczowski (1930). It might be explained by the enhanced influence of game during Russian management which favoured regeneration of *P. abies* against other tree species (Falinski 1986, 1988).

The tree ring measurements of two *C. betulus* trees, now dated back to 1896 and 1900, are not very reliable. The combination of faint tree rings typical for the species with periods of slow increment gave some problems. The heart of these trees was rotted so the tree age could only be determined by extrapolation. *C. betulus* establishment shows two gaps, one from 1824 until 1862 and the other from 1900 until 1923. The latter may have been caused by the high grazing pressure in those days (Falinski 1986, 1988). Except for one 344-year-old *T. cordata* tree, all trees became established more or less continuously after 1922. The increase of *T. cordata* regeneration is similar to the findings of Wlozczewski (1972) after 33 years observation of the permanent plot compartment 319. All *Populus tremula* trees established themselves between 1918 and 1938.

7.2.3 Pattern in the Regeneration Mosaic

Similar to the core areas of the beech forests of Fontainebleau, in the core area of Bialowieza a network pattern can be recognized (Figs. 7.14 and 7.15). While in Fontainebleau a height limit of 20 m is used to separate the emergent trees from the potential set, in Bialowieza - because of more than one species that reach different maximum heights - the whole set of potential trees can be depicted (Fig. 7.14b).

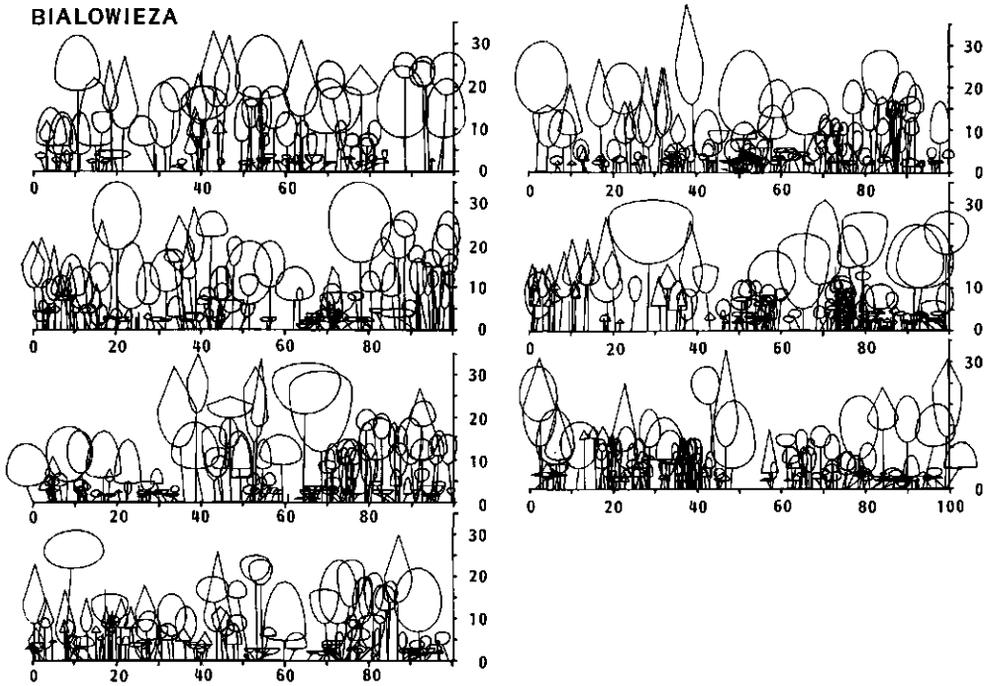


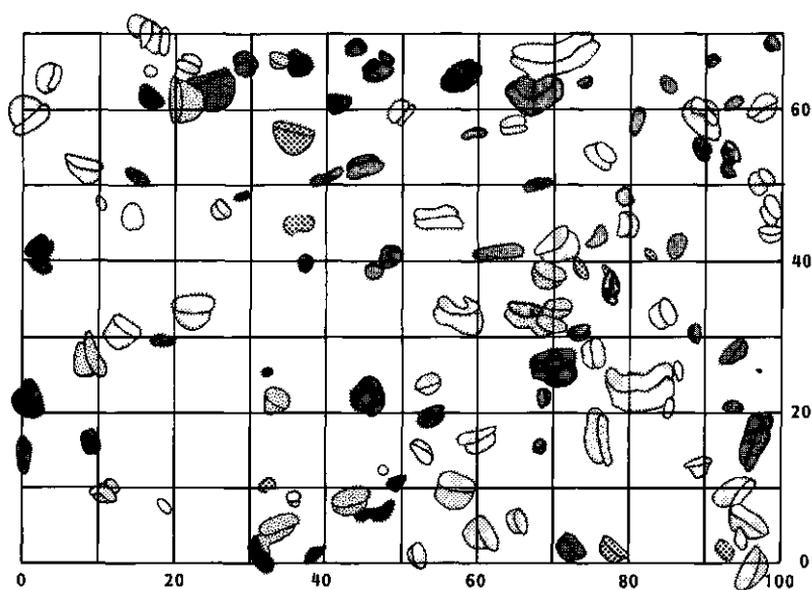
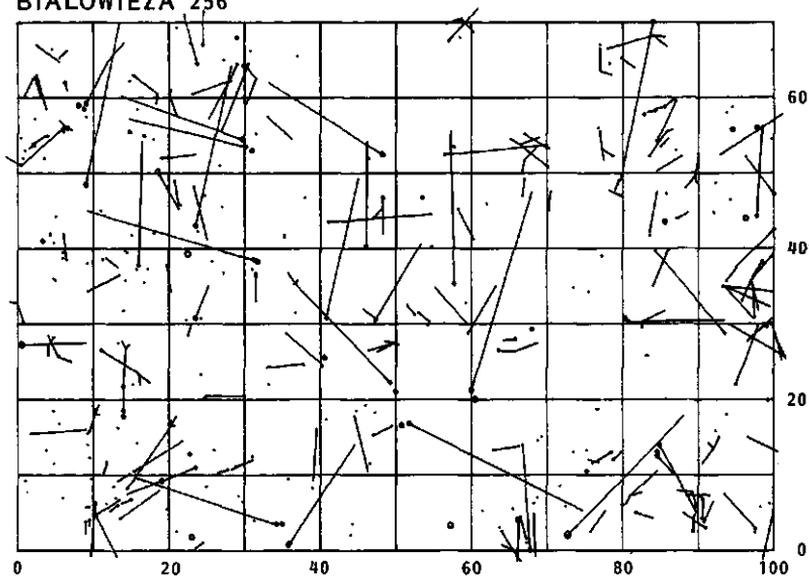
Fig. 7.15. Side views of seven adjacent 10 x 100 m transects through the core area in compartment 256 in the Bialowieza National Park plotted with the program ARBOPLOT

The highest trees in this regeneration network occur in more or less coherent regeneration units.

7.2.4 Forest Growth Reconstruction

Traces of uprooting and the positions of dead wood in the core area (Fig. 7.16) belonging to the *Tilio-Carpinetum* (Falinski 1986) bring to the fore some information about forest dynamics in the far past. Uprooting is a common forest process. Many authors reported on it, especially in regions with remnants of virgin forests or where forest floors had not been levelled (Lutz 1940; Stephens 1956; Armson and Fessenden 1973; Stone 1975; Brown 1976; Koop 1981; Beatty 1981). Brewer and Merritt (1978) and Beatty (1981) considered the area of disturbed soil of an uprooting to be half an ellipse. Hutnik (1952), Lyford and Maclean (1966) and Putz (1983) reported on the influence of uprootings upon tree distribution. Londo (1976), Beatty (1981) and Koop (1981) described the influence on species composition in the herb layer. Oliver and Stephens (1977) and Zeide (1981) describe methods of mound dating by research on trees that grow on them.

BIALOWIEZA 256




 1 2 3 3-4 4

Fig. 7.16. A Lying and standing dead trees in the core area in compartment 256 of the Bialowieza National Park. **B** Traces of uprooting in different stages of flattening (see numbers) in the core area in compartment 256 of the Bialowieza National Park

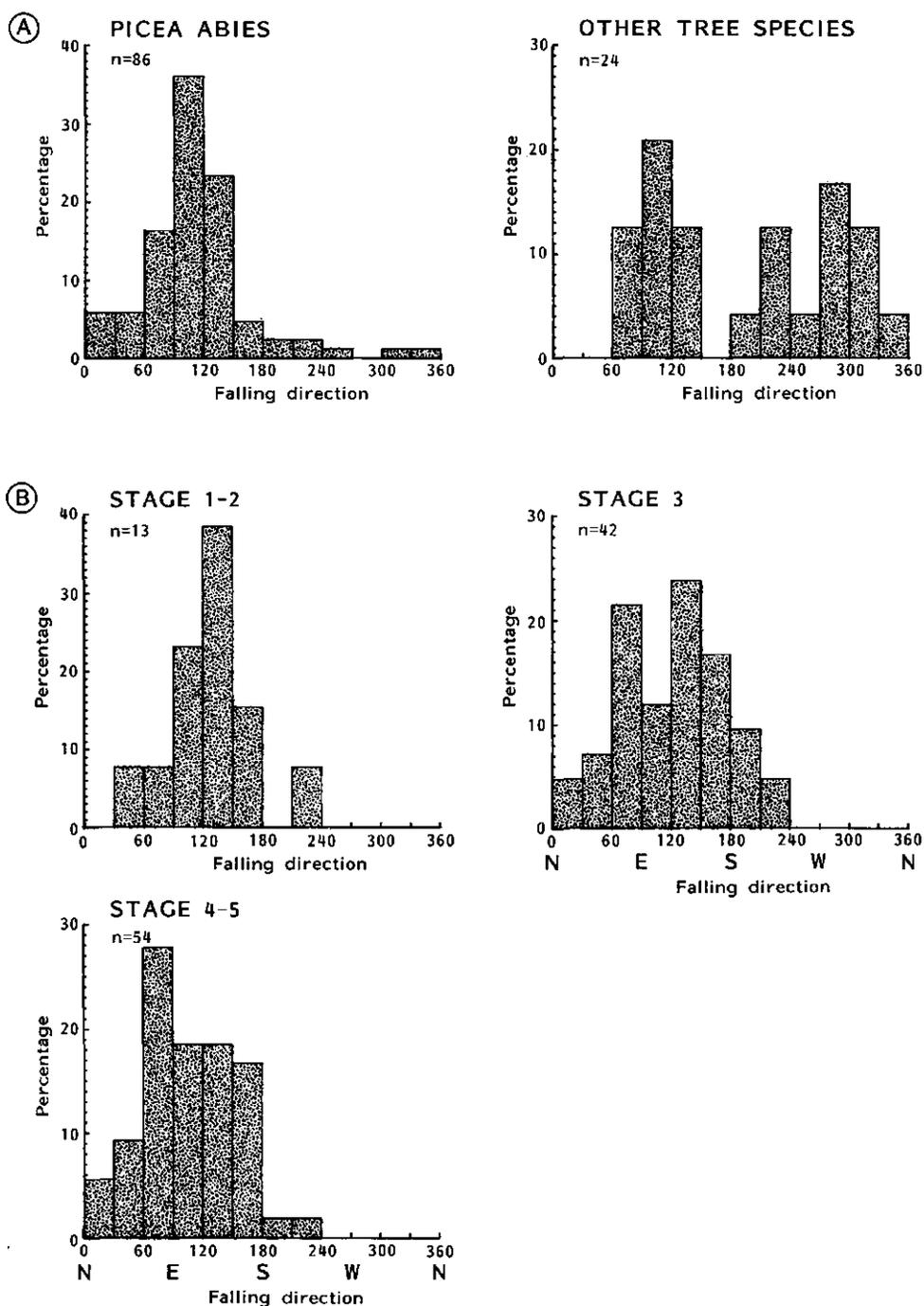


Fig. 7.17 A Fall direction of uprooted *Picea abies* trees and other species registered by Falinski (1976) in the autumn of 1971, on a 100-ha surface of the *Tilio-Carpinetum*. **B** Fall direction of uprooted trees in stage of flattening 1-2, 3 and 4-5, interpreted from the mound-and-pit micro-relief, as being perpendicular to the longitudinal axis of the mound away from the pit in the core area in compartment 256 of the Bialowieza National Park

Henry and Swan (1974) used the information provided by the position and state of decay of dead wood for reconstructing the forest history of a forest on a restricted area. Falinski (1977, 1986) showed that repeated charting of dead wood can be a useful tool for detailed studies on dead wood dynamics. Mortality, translocation and decomposition of wood, as an important part of the forest ecosystem flow of organic material, has been studied by Falinski (1977) and Sollins (1981).

The direction of tree fall of an ancient uprooting can be read from the mound-and-pit micro-relief, as being perpendicular to the longitudinal axis of the mound away from the pit. However, the sequence of mound and pit may be interchanged in the case of uprooted trees falling against other trees. Because of a return stroke the mass of earth clinging to the root system is moved to the other side of the pit, causing a reflected image of the normally formed mound-and-pit micro-relief (Koop 1981; Beatty 1981). The falling direction may then be misinterpreted by 180° . In recent uprootings in the core area, this effect was only observed in deciduous trees and not in *P. abies*.

Nevertheless, Falinski (1976, 1986) noted that trees obviously really fall against the wind. The author concludes that for the fall of the tree, not the direct wind slashes but indirect wind turbulations might be responsible. Kuiper and Van Schoten (1985) and Kuiper (in preparation) working with Douglas fir, stress the importance of swinging and oscillations as a cause of uprooting.

The direction of ancient tree falls interpreted from mound-and-pit micro-relief in the core area shows a huge peak from north-east to south-east (Fig. 7.17). Tree falls registered by Falinski (1976) in the autumn of 1971, on a 100-ha surface of the *Tilio-Carpinetum*, show a similar peak, but only for *P. abies* (Fig. 7.17).

For deciduous tree species, the absolute numbers of uprooted trees are much lower than for *P. abies*, 24 against 86. Moreover, their direction of fall is more spread (Fig. 7.17). The peak around 280° and its inverse around 100° ($280-180^{\circ}$) might be explained by the above-mentioned processes of flyback and fall against the wind. In conclusion, it seems that *P. abies* was the species most often uprooted in the core area. This conclusion is substantiated by the form and dimensions of the mounds and pits. Recent *P. abies* falls caused very long, low, stretched mounds with half-circular, shallow pits. Deciduous trees cause a much more compact micro-relief, i.e. an elliptical higher mound and a smaller but relatively deeper pit. In the oldest uprootings (stage of flattening 3 and 4), some immensely long mounds are found, while the shallow pits can hardly be recognized.

Nine *P. tremula* trees grow on the mounds of uprootings of stage 3 and another 14 in their direct surroundings. All these trees established between 1918 and 1938 (Figs. 7.16, 7.18 and 7.19b). Growth reactions of trees in the direct surroundings of the uprooting indicate that all uprootings of stage 3 can be attributed to one storm around 1917. Two types of growth reactions indicate the date of uprooting, i.e. short negative growth reactions especially of the undergrowth *P. abies* trees, caused by damage of falling trees and lasting positive, slowly falling, growth reactions of seven *Carpinus betulus* trees caused by release. After 70 years, no remnants of the uprooted trees remain. The *P. tremula* trees are arranged in clearly separate regeneration units. Possibly their quick clustered establishment was favoured by their ability of clonal rejuvenation (Koop 1987).

Besides trees being uprooted, many old trees, especially *P. abies*, broke down without uprooting. Many lying tree bodies and tree stumps in a progressed stage of decay (code 5, see figure III.6e) were mapped (Fig. 7.16). Probably these trees died before they fell. Using growth reactions upon release of surrounding trees, the death of these trees could be dated from 1939 to 1944. The oldest woody remains of *P. abies* therefore are

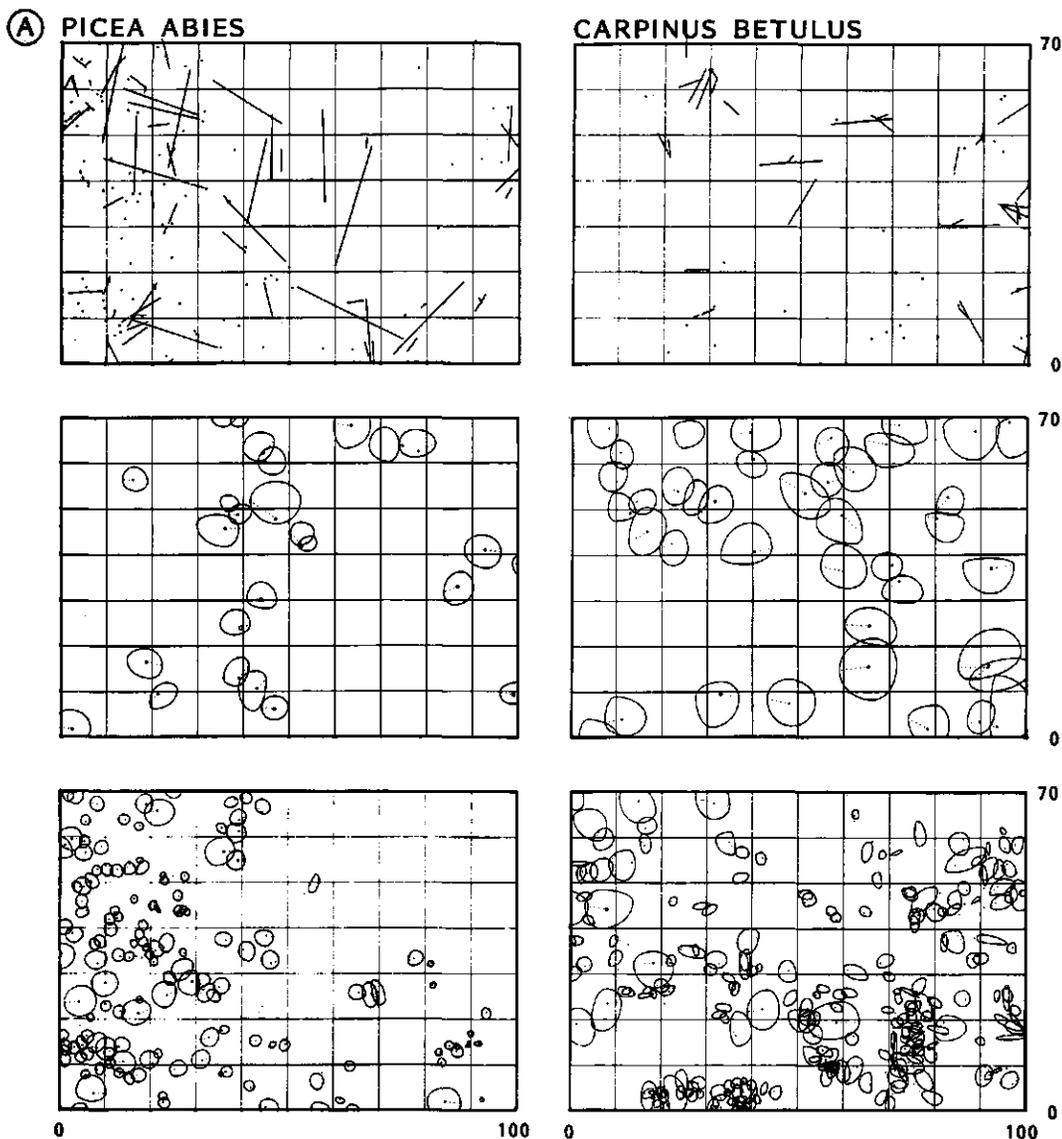
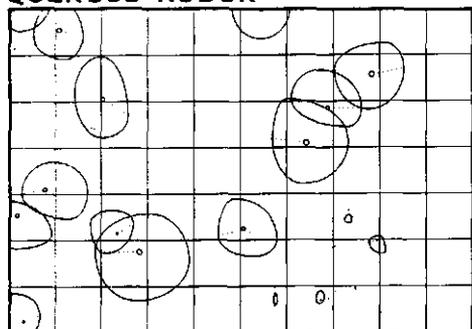


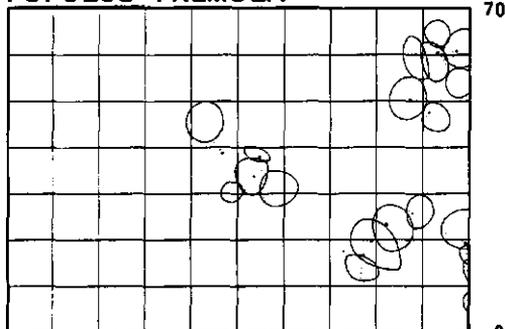
Fig. 7.18. A Computer-plotted ground plan of, respectively, dead trees, trees of the present and potential trees of *Picea abies*, *Carpinus betulus*. **B** (see next page) Computer-plotted ground plan of *Quercus robur*, *Populus tremula*, *Corylus avellana* and *Tilia cordata* in the core area of section 256 of the National Park of Bialowieza

not older than 50 years. The fall sometimes can be reconstructed by short negative growth reactions of trees damaged by the fall 10 to 15 years after the death of the tree. This period of declining *P. abies* probably triggered the establishment of the second regeneration wave of *P. abies*. Some *T. cordata* trees show increased diameter increment after 1947 and many trees became newly established during the following years (Fig. 7.13). In 1984 and 1985, two storms threw many *P. abies* and some *C. betulus*. These uprootings belong to stage 1 of flattening (Fig. 7.16). Only five uprootings of stage 2

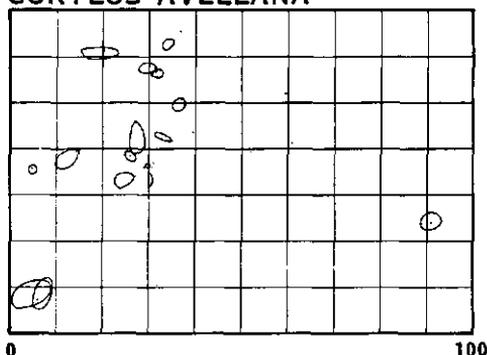
Ⓑ QUERCUS ROBUR



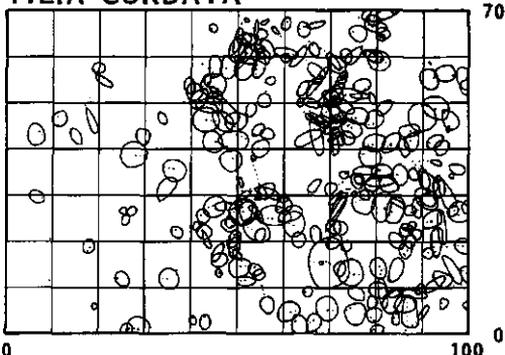
POPULUS TREMULA



CORYLUS AVELLANA



TILIA CORDATA



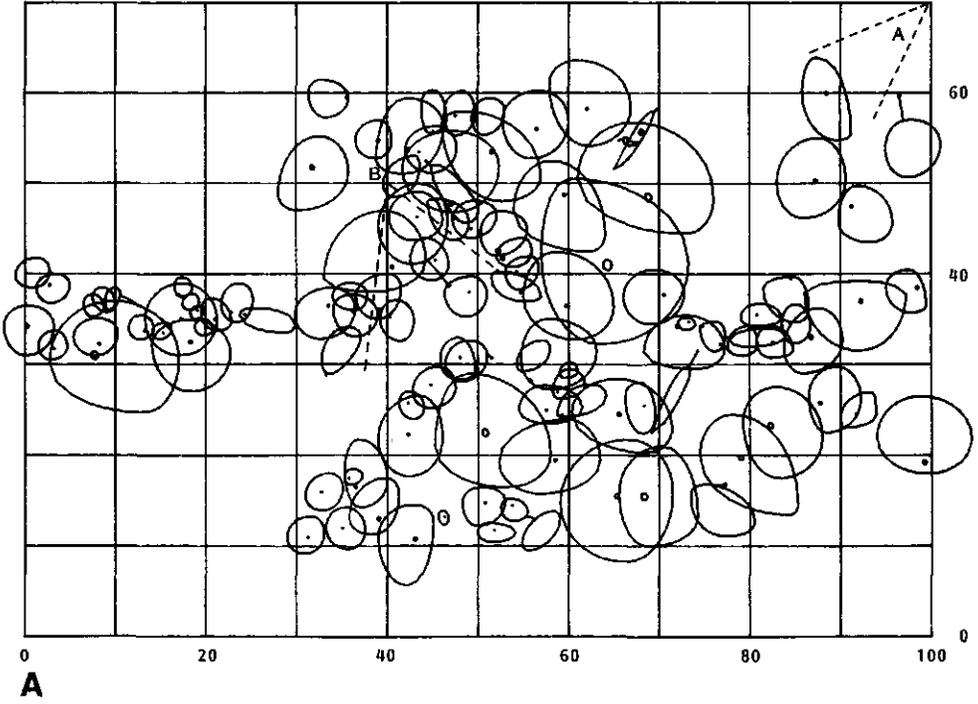
could be mapped, one of which could be dated back to 1955. The others are situated outside the area where tree ring samples were taken.

The oldest stage of flattening, i.e. stage 4, could not be directly dated like stage 3 except in the case of one 353-year-old *Q. robur* that grows on one of the oldest uprootings. Synchronous periods of growth increase or decrease in old *Q. robur*, *P. abies* and *C. betulus* trees can indicate local release or canopy closure. Some old trees show increased growth in 1755 and 1810 and a decrease of their growth in 1775. The traces of uprooting in stage 4 of flattening probably belong to the oldest period of growth increase. Some of the intermediate mound-and-pit micro-relief between stage 3 and 4 might be dated back to 1810. However, these data, coming from only a few trees, cannot help to reconstruct an early forest growth.

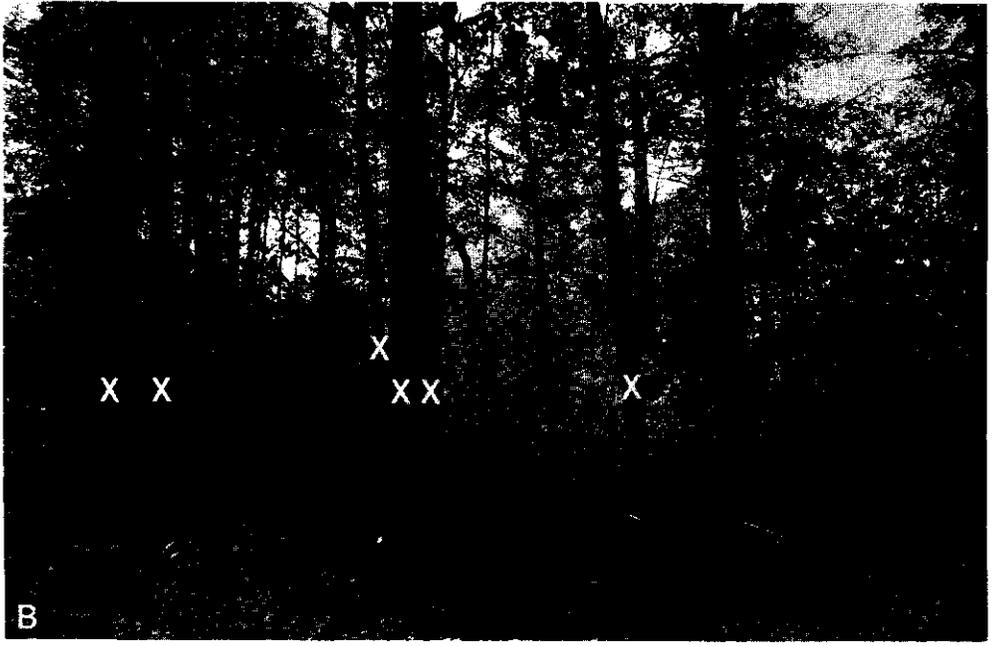
During the period 1860-1900 all trees show a lasting decrease in growth, which might be explained by canopy closure of the *P. abies*-dominated forest. Possibly soil compaction and modified nutrient turnover during the period of high grazing pressure might have had some effect on tree growth as well. The gradual growth increase around 1900 might be explained by a natural thinning and starting decline of the 17th century *P. abies*, generation together with a backlog of regeneration due to the high grazing pressure, which gave the remaining trees more room.

During the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, big *P. abies* trees dominated a large part of the transect area (Fig. 7.20). Some parts were dominated by *C. betulus* and a big *Q. robur*. Under the canopy of these broadleaved trees, *P. abies* trees became established at the end of the eighteenth century. Some of these *P. abies* trees have now overgrown the *C. betulus* canopy. In 1917, like in the rest of the core area, many big *P. abies* trees were uprooted. This event triggered the establishment of three groups of *P. tremula* trees (Fig. 7.18), of which one group together with an *Acer platanoides* tree, can

BIALOWIEZA



A



B

be found in the middle of the transect. During the natural thinning in *P. abies* during the late 1940's, in the first part of the transect a new generation of *P. abies* became established. Until 1984 a gradual decline of *P. abies* and *P. tremula* took place. The canopy gap formed by the death of an old *C. betulus* in 1943 was filled by a regeneration unit of mainly *T. cordata*. The young *T. cordata* trees at the margin of the opening show lateral crown growth in the direction of the light. Hallé et al. (1978) referred to this phenomenon as the "river-bank effect". The storms of 1984 and 1985 uprooted the remaining emergent *P. abies* trees.

7.2.5 Mosaic Development During Regeneration

Areas with many living trees or dead tree bodies of *P. abies* and areas with high numbers of older uprooting traces without traces of a tree body of *P. abies* almost mutually exclude each other (cf. Figs. 7.16, 7.18). This means that *P. abies* once dominated the whole core area but drew back successively since 1917 from different parts of the core area. The dominant role of *P. abies* is confirmed by the map of stands with prevailing spruce by Karcev (1903). In 1982 only three of these very old trees survived. Many of the tree bodies on the forest floor, as well as those trees that were uprooted about 1917 and could be traced by the mound-and-pit micro-relief, probably belonged to this generation. Apparently about 1917 uprooting played an important role, while in the 1940's many trees died while standing. The recent storms of 1984 and 1985 uprooted and broke many *P. abies* trees including the last ones of the eighteenth century generation. *P. abies* is the most shade-tolerant species in this area and it can withstand periods of severe grazing pressure better than the other species. The oldest tree sampled for tree rings in the core area is 228 years old. This suggests that the species is an opportunist that could reach a dominating position during the eighteenth century. The establishment of the old trees that died and were uprooted in the period 1900-1945 cannot be explained by the high stock of game during Russian management, although in this period the *P. abies* regeneration was relatively favoured (Falinski 1986, 1988) (Fig. 7.13). Conditions in the eighteenth century must have favoured the old generation of *P. abies*. However, what these conditions actually were, could not be reconstructed from the data. The age structure of *P. abies* with regeneration periods in the eighteenth, late nineteenth centuries and around 1945 shows some similarity with the wavelike tree generations of the beeches in Fontainebleau.

C. betulus, which had a maximum age in the core area of 264 years, shows an almost continuous establishment. There are two interruptions, the first during canopy closure of *P. abies* in the nineteenth century and the second during high grazing pressure in the period 1900-1923.

The oldest regeneration units in the network of potential trees probably originate from the 1917 storm. The part of the network that crosses the transect at 80 m (Fig. 7.20) dates back to 1942.

←

Fig. 7.19. A Computer-plotted ground plan drawing of the area sampled for tree rings in the core area of compartment 256 of the Bialowieza National Park (Poland). **B** Uprooting mound-and-pit micro-relief of stage of flattening 3 with *Populus tremula* trees on the mounds (indicated with white cross) in core area compartment 256 in the National Park of Bialowieza June 1987. Position of the photograph indicated in A

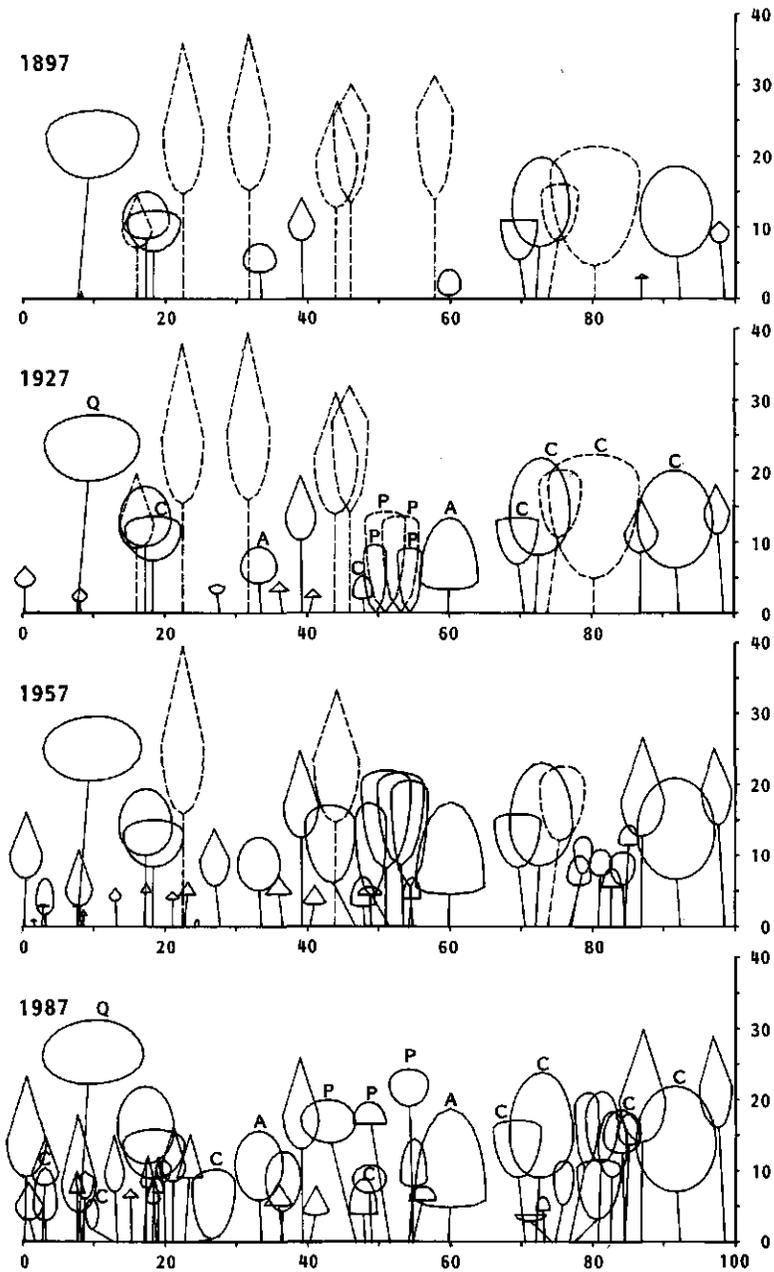


Fig. 7.20. Reconstructed structural forest development using the program GROWING (see Chap. 6.5). Woody transect area in core area of the section 256 in the National Park of Bialowieza. Four pictures at 30 years' intervals have been cut out of the cartoon film that covers 200 years. *Q* *Quercus robur*, *C* *Carpinus betulus*, *P* *Populus tremula*, *A* *Acer platanoides* other trees *Picea abies* and *Tilia cordata*

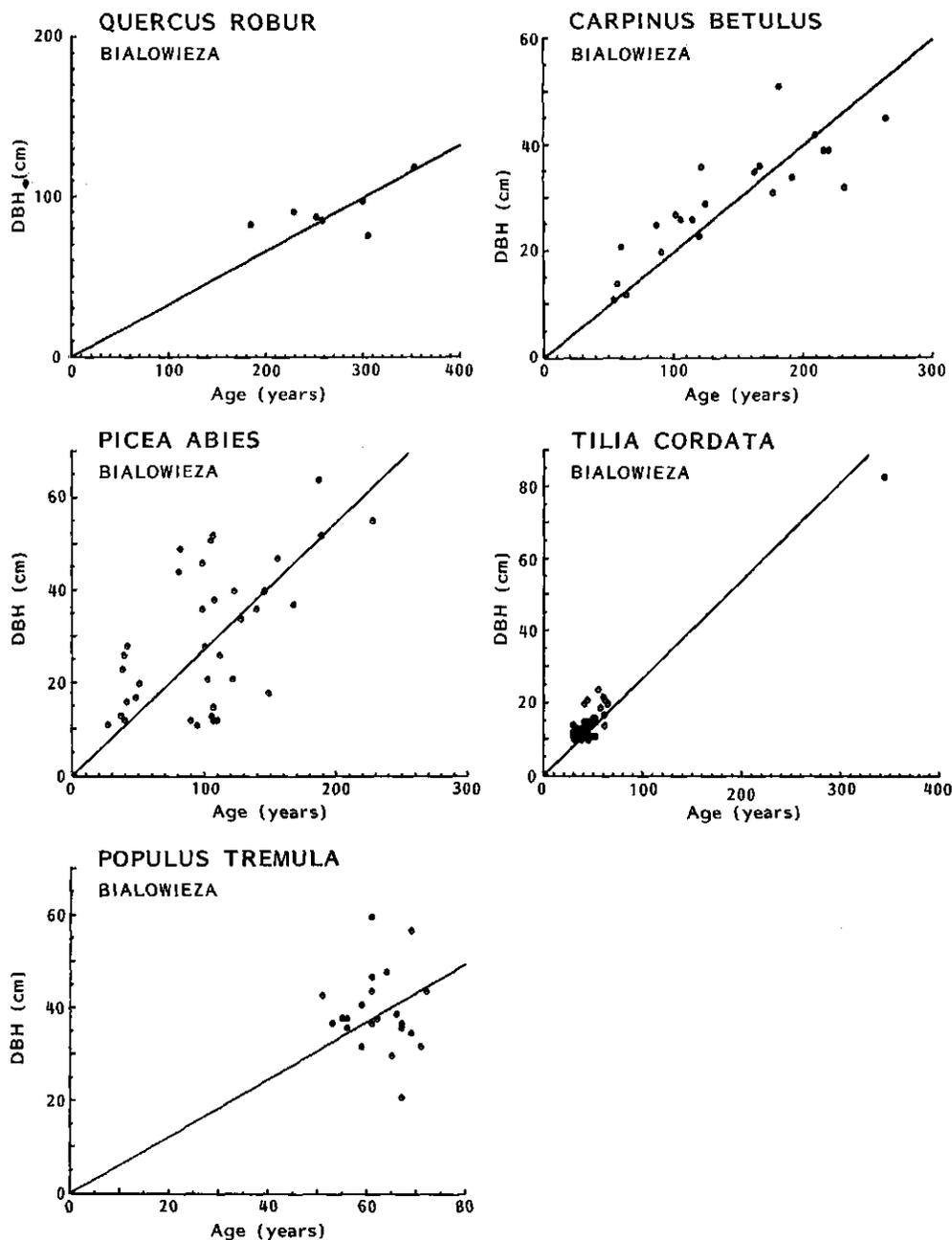


Fig. 7.21. Relation between tree age and Dbh for all trees sampled for tree rings in the core area of compartment 256 of the Białowieża National Park

The story of mosaic development is more complex than in Fontainebleau because of different tree species, each with their own growth rates and maximum life-span. In Figure 7.21 the different Dbh increment rates with age per species are plotted. For example, a *P. abies* tree of 100 years old can have a Dhh of 10 cm or of 50 cm. The tree species can wait for long time periods in the shade and then accelerate growth. Canopy gaps filled by *P. tremula* have turned into a tree phase of more than 20 meter in height within 40 years. Nevertheless, their life-span will be between 70 and, say, 100 years. On the other hand mature *Q. robur* and *T. cordata* trees grow slowly and have inhabited parts of the silvatic mosaic for centuries. The oldest *T. cordata* was 344 years old.

7.3 Reconstruction of Forest Dynamics in Pasture Woodlands in the New Forest (England)

In the New Forest in 1980 the first three woody transect areas were laid out. Because the effects of forest grazing upon forest structure have their main impact upon shifts in the silvatic mosaic, in the design of nested plots the level of the core area has been left out. Instead, more and longer woody transect areas have been analyzed to capture all aspects of forest grazing. In 1983, Drenth and Oosterbaan (1984) enlarged the number of transects to ten with a total length of 1.73 km. In 1988, the transects were assessed for the second time. The reconstruction of forest dynamics will be different from the methods used in the two previously described forest reserves. It will be based on tree ring analyses of other authors and on interpretation of actual patterns of forest vegetation and recent developments.

7.3.1 Historical Analysis

Peterken and Tubbs (1965) discuss the regeneration phases in the unenclosed woods of the New Forest. Although regeneration has always been present to some degree, tree ring countings in 24 woods confirm distinct tree generations. The generations can be linked with cuttings or a fall in grazing pressure. There is a Pre-A-generation of which only 24 oaks throughout the whole forest have been recorded.

The A-generation dates from 1625-1685. The 1707 survey of the New Forest records the very heavy fellings that went on during the reigns of Charles I and Charles II (Flower 1980). Flower mentions the notes accompanying the 1707 survey which say that: "All the above 12,000 trees, suitable for the Navy, may be felled over the next 40 years without detriment to the Forest, there being so many young trees, not yet of a sufficient size". The generation of young oaks referred to in the notes must have dated from around the middle of the seventeenth century and coincided with the A-generation. The existence of this generation during the Stuart period is confirmed by Presentments of the Regards in 1660. In regard to the nature of these fellings there is direct evidence for preferential removal of oak for Navy shipbuilding purposes. Richards et al. (1787 in: Flower, 1980) describe that amongst other woods Rushpole wood has been cleared for oak for the Navy. The wood is described as: "Oak/beechness wood with some fine oaks remaining, but most having been felled for the Navy". The A-generation was followed by a relatively short period during which relatively little regeneration took place. In the period 1725-1825, in response to further oak removal for shipbuilding, widespread regeneration took place.



Fig. 7.22. Photograph of the 300-year-old A-generation beech forest of Bratley Wood in one of the transects in the New Forest. While other parts of the Bratley Wood are collapsing gradually (see Fig. 7.24) this part still survived (June 1988)

The central parts of the ancient woods in the New Forest, under study with the information system, such as Denny Wood, Mark Ash Wood, Bratley Wood and Berry Wood, almost purely consist or consisted of the 300-year-old A-generation and its follow-up. They show a rather homogeneous structure of more or less even-aged beech trees with a Dbh around 100 cm (Fig. 7.22). Regeneration units of beech, even if they differ in age, tend to fuse, as in Fontainebleau, to even-sized units. Most of the A-generation trees show a short-stemmed wide-branching habit, with wide growth rings in their youth, all the result of development in open conditions.

The second marked phase of regeneration common to all unenclosed woods, the so-called B-generation, can be dated from 1851-1875. It is a direct result of the rapid fall in grazing pressure brought about by the deer removal act of 1851 (Fig. 7.23). In the transects in the Denny Wood and the Berry Wood, this generation resulted in a woodland encroachment on the edges with oak.

The last or C-generation from 1935-1955, which occurred throughout the forest, was a response to a rapid fall in the numbers of cattle and ponies due to a collapse of the meat market.

Reconstruction of Long-Term Non-Cyclic Forest Dynamics

In this chapter two examples of successional forest development will be analyzed, one on a sediment alluvial soil and the second on a growing peat soil.

8.1 Non-Cyclic Forest Dynamics in Unexploited River-Bank Willow Forest on the Ile De Rhinau (France)

The present river-bank *Fraxino-Ulmetum* on the Ile de Rhinau along the river Rhine near Strasbourg was sampled for tree rings by Vandeursen and Wisse (1985) in 1981. In 1984 a core area was charted around the transects established by Vandeursen and Wisse in 1981.

8.1.1 Historical Analysis

Although the river has changed its main course several times, the existence of the site where the core area is situated can be documented from old maps, back until at least 1830. On a management map of 1880 the area is characterized as an *Alnus-Salix* forest. Because of canalization of the Rhine since 1840, a narrowed riverbed profile increased the erosive impact upon the forest. Since the "Grand Canal d'Alsace" was built in the period between 1920 and 1970, the erosion and river dynamics have declined. Only when water levels are very high, is the forest flooded (Carbiener and Schnitzler 1987, 1988). The soil profiles under the woody transect area show an undulating gravel bed at a depth fluctuating from 40 to 120 cm. The gravel bed is covered by stratified deposits with varied texture. The lowest groundwater levels vary from 140 to 100 cm. The upper 15 cm consist of biologically homogenized loamy sand.

8.1.2 Tree Age Distribution

The age distribution diagram of all trees of which tree rings were sampled (Fig. 8.1) shows distinct generations. The oldest trees belong to the species *Quercus robur*. They date from 1830 to 1900 with a clear peak around 1890. According to the management map of 1880, at this time the forest was dominated by *Salix* and *Alnus*. The *Salix* and *Alnus* trees probably became established on newly sedimented bare areas,

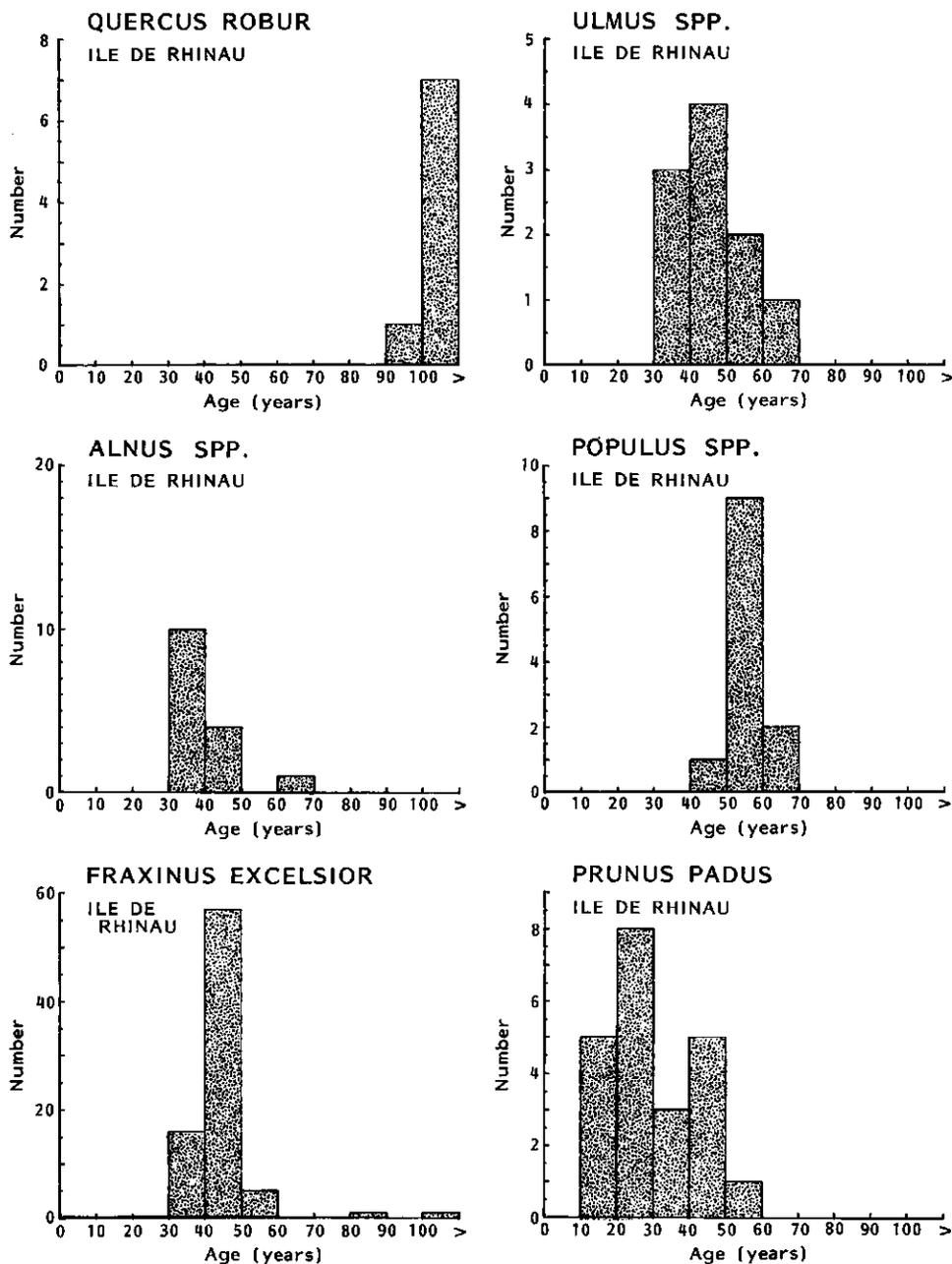


Fig. 8.1. Age distribution diagram of all trees sampled for tree rings in the woody transect area of the Ile de Rhinau. Tree age is established by counting tree rings. If the tree core was not in the sample, the remaining tree ring numbers were estimated as the distance to the tree core divided by the average tree ring width

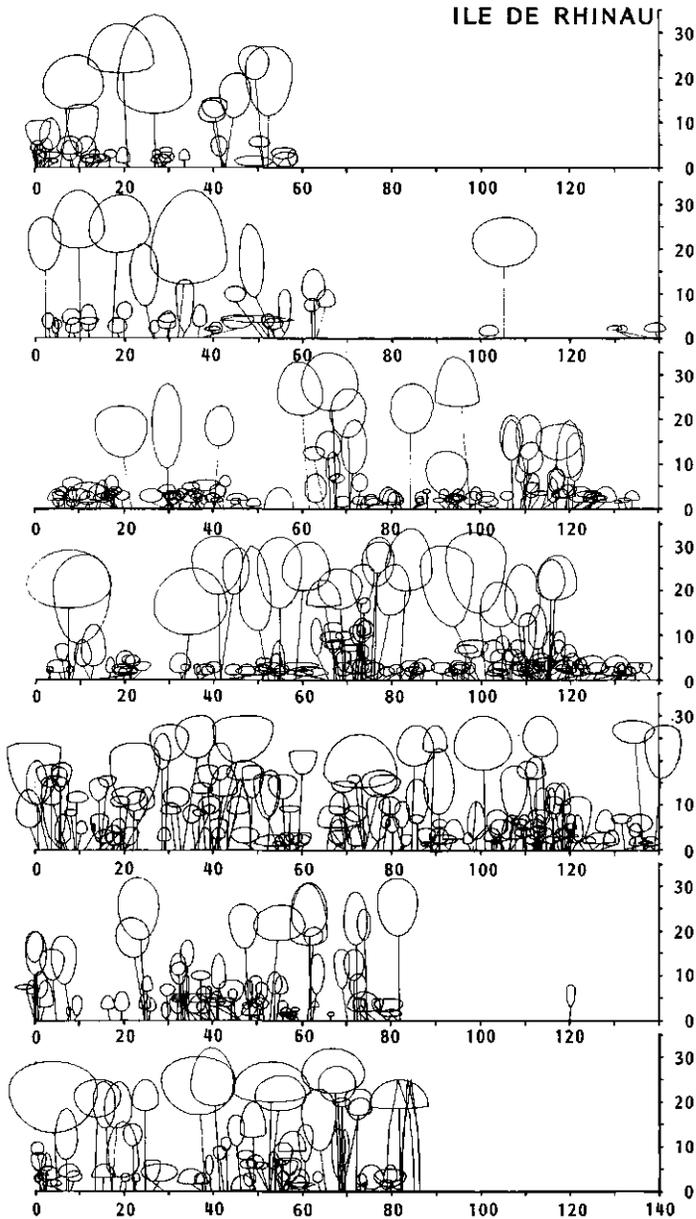


Fig. 8.2. Side views of three 10 x 140 m and four 10 x 80 m transects through the core area in Ile de Rhinau (France) plotted with the program ARBOPLOT

resulting in an even-aged forest. Because of the Dutch elm disease, many *Ulmus* spp. trees died and were cut in 1977. In the transect area only three small stumps of cut *Ulmus* spp. trees are found. Thanks to tree ring counts by Walter (unpublished) on the

stumps of the trees cutover a much larger area around the core area, three peaks in the age distribution of *Ulmus* spp. could be distinguished, similar to those of *Q. robur*, a small peak at the beginning of the nineteenth century, a much bigger one around 1890 and the third small one in the years 1910-1930 (Vandeursen and Wisse 1985). In the transect area only trees of the latter period of regeneration are represented (Fig. 8.1).

If we assume that the *Salix-Abnus* forest became established in the same period as the oldest oaks and elms at the beginning of the nineteenth century, it is likely that the establishment of second-generation oaks and elms around 1890 coincides with the starting collapse of the pioneer forest. From the trees established at the beginning of the nineteenth century in the core area only, a few *Q. robur* and one *Fraxinus excelsior* survived.

8.1.3 Pattern in Regeneration Mosaic

Although Van de Winkel (1980, 1984) described network pattern in the river-bank forest Wyhlerwald along the Rhine in the French Alsace, no particular network pattern can be found in the regeneration mosaic in the core area (Fig. 8.2). The Wyhlerwald is older in succession to a *Fraxino-Ulmetum* and since floodings belong to the past because of embankment even a further succession can be observed toward a *Carpinetum* (Carbiener et al. 1987).

In the south-eastern edge of the core area at 120 m, a dense blanket of *Clematis vitalba* covers the ground and at the edges climbs into the trees (Fig. 8.3c,d). Beekman (1980) in similar forests in the Alsace found under most *C. vitalba* blankets cut tree stumps. He found that for establishment of *C. vitalba*, canopy gaps of more than one tree height in diameter are necessary and that regeneration of trees must lag behind. According to personal communication with the forest manager, shortly after 1930 big *Ulmus* spp. were cut in the present core area at the place of the *C. vitalba* blanket. The young trees that establish themselves under the blanket of *C. vitalba* or that become overgrown at the edges of the canopy gap are pulled to the ground by the weight of the lianes. It seems that once the cover of lianes has become established, it is very difficult for trees to establish themselves. In the core area the lianes have prevented trees from establishing for at least 60 years. The observations are too short to draw any conclusion about the increase of the *C. vitalba* cover at the expense of the trees at the forest edge. At 80 m in strip 7 of the core area (Fig. 8.2), some *C. vitalba* stems with diameters up to 12 cm hang down from the canopy of an old *Quercus robur* tree. Because the lianes hang down freely, they must have become established and have grown up together with the oak tree without having prevented the oak tree from growing to its present dimensions.

8.1.4 Forest Growth Reconstruction

Two woody transect areas were sampled for tree rings. Both transects represent a *Fraxino-Ulmetum*. The first transect traverses a former stream gully (between 60 and 70 m) that can be characterized as a *Fraxino-Ulmetum alnetosum* (Van der Werf 1989). Connected with the first transect the second follows the stream ridge at the edge of the same gully. Although both transects form an angle of about 45° (Fig. 8.3), in the side view the second transect has been rotated to be in line with the first one (Fig. 8.4).

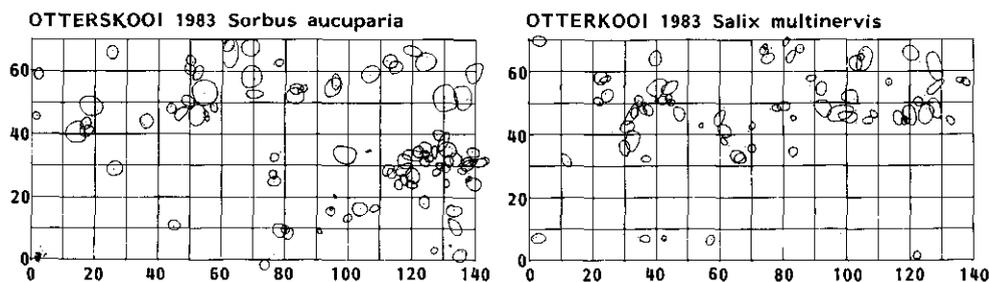


Fig. 8.11. Computer-plotted crown projection maps for *Sorbus aucuparia* and *Salix multinervis*

potential trees occur in the *Calamagrostis* variant and typical variant of the *Dryopteris* type (Fig. 8.12). The relative portion of trees of the present, however, is highest in the *Calamagrostis*, the typical and *Phragmites* variant of *Dryopteris* type (Fig. 8.13). In the *Sorbus* and *Phragmites* variant of the *Dryopteris* type higher tree densities of trees of the present and potential trees coincide. Trees of the present of *B. pubescens* show a strong affinity to the *Sorbus* type (Figs. 8.12 and 8.13). Tree densities decrease in the *Phragmites* and typical variant of the *Dryopteris* type respectively. Potential trees of *B. pubescens* are relatively scarce and show a distribution pattern similar to the trees of the present. Trees of the past show a similar pattern but their densities are higher than those of the present and potential trees. While trees of the past were present in all types except in the ditches, trees of the present occur only in the typical and *Phragmites* variants of *Dryopteris* type and in the *Sorbus* type (Fig. 8.13). As a potential tree it plays a subordinate role only in all vegetation types. In conclusion, the role of *A. glutinosa* and *B. pubescens* declines. Trees of the present of *A. glutinosa* still indicate the dominant role of the tree in the present situation. Potential trees of *A. glutinosa*, however, play a role of some importance only on the younger, thin peat soils of the ditches and the *Iris* type. These only cover small surfaces. The higher relative proportions of potential trees of *A. glutinosa* and *B. pubescens* in the *Phragmites* and *Sorbus* type can possibly be explained by a lower competition factor of *F. excelsior* at these sites.

Quercus robur and *Fraxinus excelsior*

Diameter distributions of *Fraxinus excelsior* and *Quercus robur* (Fig. 8.14) differ fundamentally from those of *B. pubescens* and *A. glutinosa*. Both species have highest tree numbers in the lower diameter classes. The tree numbers in higher diameter classes decrease. This distribution warrants a lasting role of both species in the future. Because of the higher numbers of *F. excelsior* this tree will probably be the first to take over the dominant role of *A. glutinosa*.

Potential trees of *Quercus robur* are present in all vegetation types except on the youngest peat soils in the ditches and show a distribution gradient. High densities are found in the *Sorbus* type and low densities in the *Iris* type (Figs. 8.12 and 8.13). The trees of the present and trees of the past are only found in the typical and *Phragmites* variant of the *Dryopteris* type and in the *Sorbus* type. The shares of the trees of the past, trees of the present and potential trees in the vegetation types mentioned are low (Fig. 8.13).

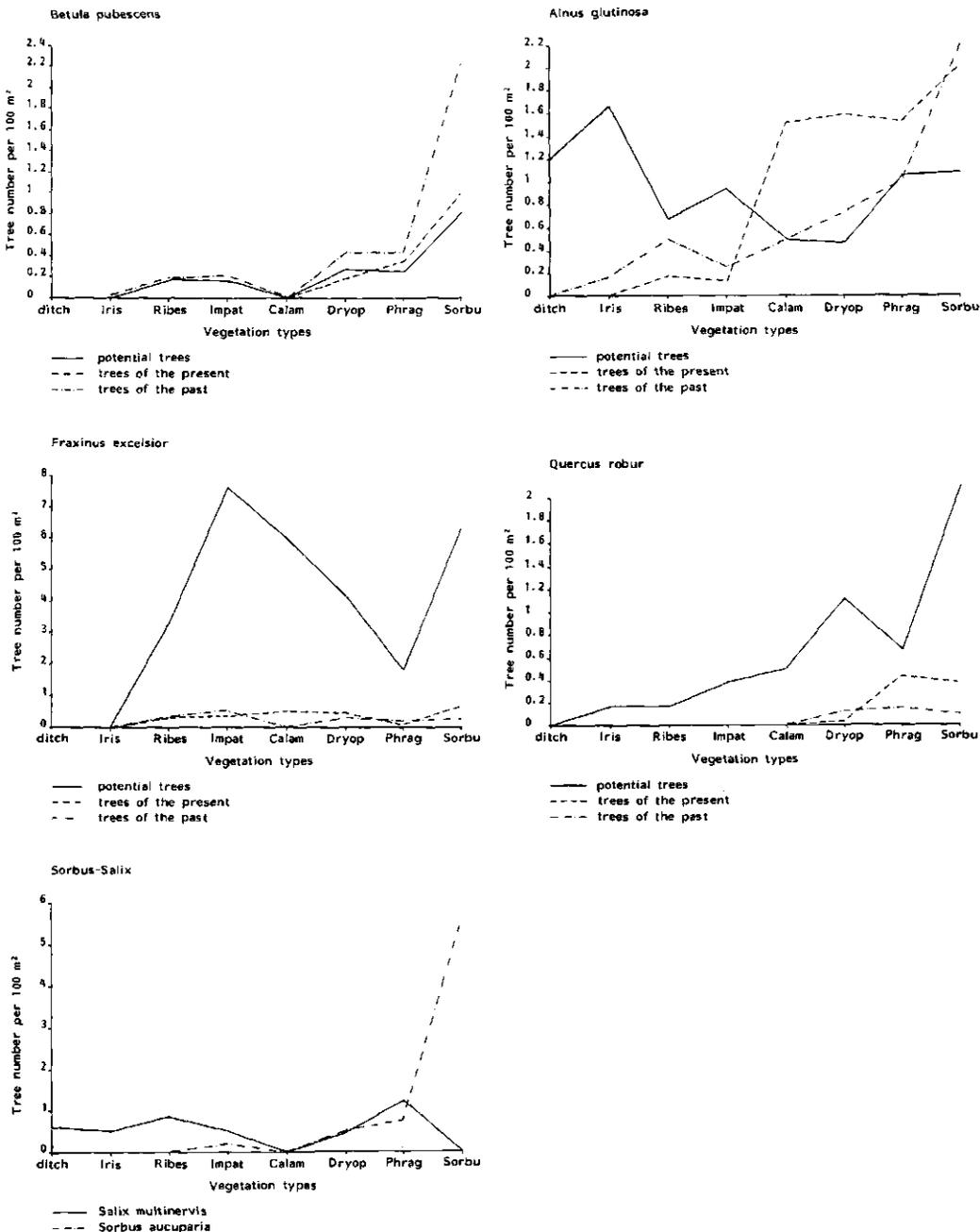


Fig 8.12. Tree numbers per 100 m² of *Alnus glutinosa*, *Betula pubescens*, *Fraxinus excelsior* and *Quercus robur* per growth potential against vegetation type. For *Salix multinervis* and *Sorbus aucuparia* no difference was made between trees with different growth potential

In conclusion, *Q. robur* first established itself on the oldest peat soils, that first became dry. Later establishment of the species in vegetation types with younger soils took place as these places had become dryer.

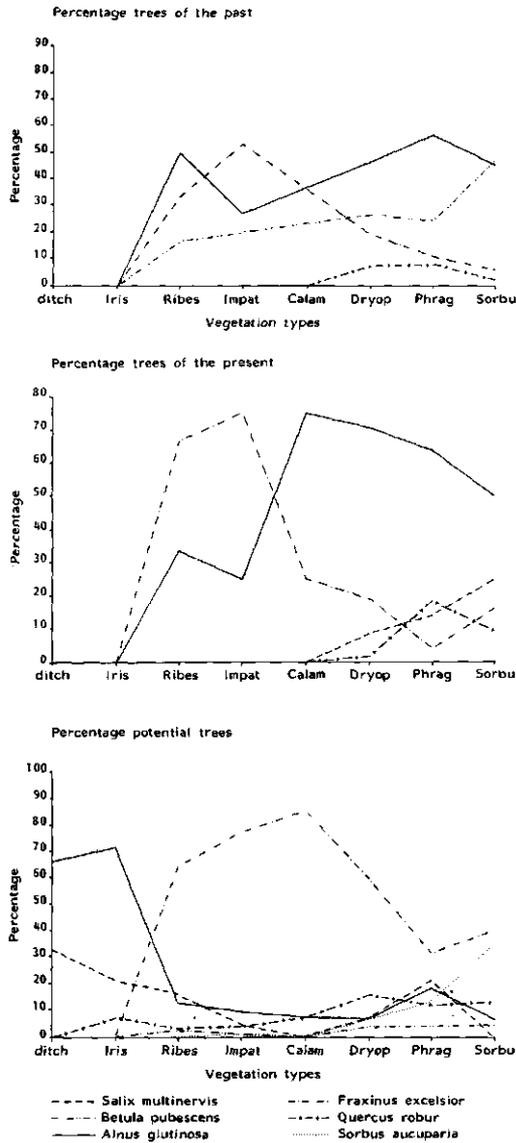


Fig. 8.13. Proportion of trees of the past, trees of the present and potential trees of *Alnus glutinosa*, *Betula pubescens*, *Fraxinus excelsior* and *Quercus robur* against vegetation type

Fraxinus excelsior has an inverse distribution pattern with regard to *Sorbus aucuparia*, *B. pubescens* and *Q. robur* (Figs. 8.12 and 8.13). In both potential trees and trees of the present, a clear distribution gradient from most trees in the *Impatiens* type, less in the typical and *Calamagrostis* variant and least in the *Phragmites* variant of the *Dryopteris* type can be distinguished. The occurrence of trees of the present and potential trees in the *Sorbus* type is caused by their preference for the edges of the ditches in contact to the open water, that have been charted as *Sorbus* type. In fact, these narrow bands show a steep gradient of different microsites. *F. excelsior* is the most frequent

potential tree in all vegetation types. Except in the *Iris* type, in its whole range of occurrence *F. excelsior* has the highest proportion in potential trees (Fig. 8.13). In trees of the present it plays a dominant role only in the *Ribes* and *Impatiens* type, while in trees of the past it dominates only in the *Impatiens* type. In conclusion, *F. excelsior* invades the dryer types from the *Impatiens* type. On the youngest peat soils of the *Iris* type and the ditches and on the other side further away from the open water in the *Phragmites* variant and in the *Sorbus* type the role of *F. excelsior* as a potential tree declines.

Sorbus aucuparia

Sorbus aucuparia is found mostly in the *Phragmites* variant and in the direct border zone of this variant to the typical variant of the *Dryopteris* type in the north-eastern part of the core area (Fig. 8.11) and of course most frequently in the *Sorbus* type itself. In lower diameter classes *S. aucuparia* has a distribution of diameters similar to *F. excelsior* and *Q. robur* (Fig. 8.14). Many thin trees warrant a stable future population.

Salix multinervis

Salix multinervis occurs most frequently in relatively open soil depressions along the ditches in the *Phragmites* variant of the *Dryopteris* type and the *Impatiens* type and in the ditches themselves (Fig. 8.11). Together with *A. glutinosa*, it is the only species that grows in the ditches. *S. multinervis* has a diameter distribution with highest tree numbers in the classes around 10 cm (Fig. 8.14). Both thinner and thicker trees are less frequent. In regard to this distribution it might seem that the future population of the species is not provided for. However, because of layering and the partly creeping behaviour of the trunks, trunks of a certain maximum diameter never rise above the 1.30-m level at which the Dbh is measured. Nevertheless, the species permanently rejuvenates vegetatively.

Although the 5-year period (1982-1987) during which this core area is under study using the information system is still far too short for general conclusions on forest dynamics, the changes observed in this period confirm the developmental trend derived from the forest structure analyses. Thirteen *Alnus glutinosa* trees, seven *Betula pubescens* trees, one *Fraxinus excelsior* and one *Sorbus aucuparia* fell down during this period. In the monitoring sequence, the next survey of the whole core area, including height and diameter measurements, will take place in 1992.

8.2.6 Potential Natural Vegetation

With the help of the architectural and historical analysis of the forest vegetation, it is possible to predict a future development in terms of potential natural vegetation (PNV) (see Chap. 3). In terms of PNV the vegetation types can be divided into three units. The *Thelypteris* unit and the *Carex* unit and their complex, confined to the younger woodlands (see Fig. 3.9), as well as the ditches and the *Iris* type, on the youngest thin peat layers in the core area, can be considered as an *Alnetum*. In these units the highest portions of *B. pubescens* and *A. glutinosa* have been detected on the aerial photograph

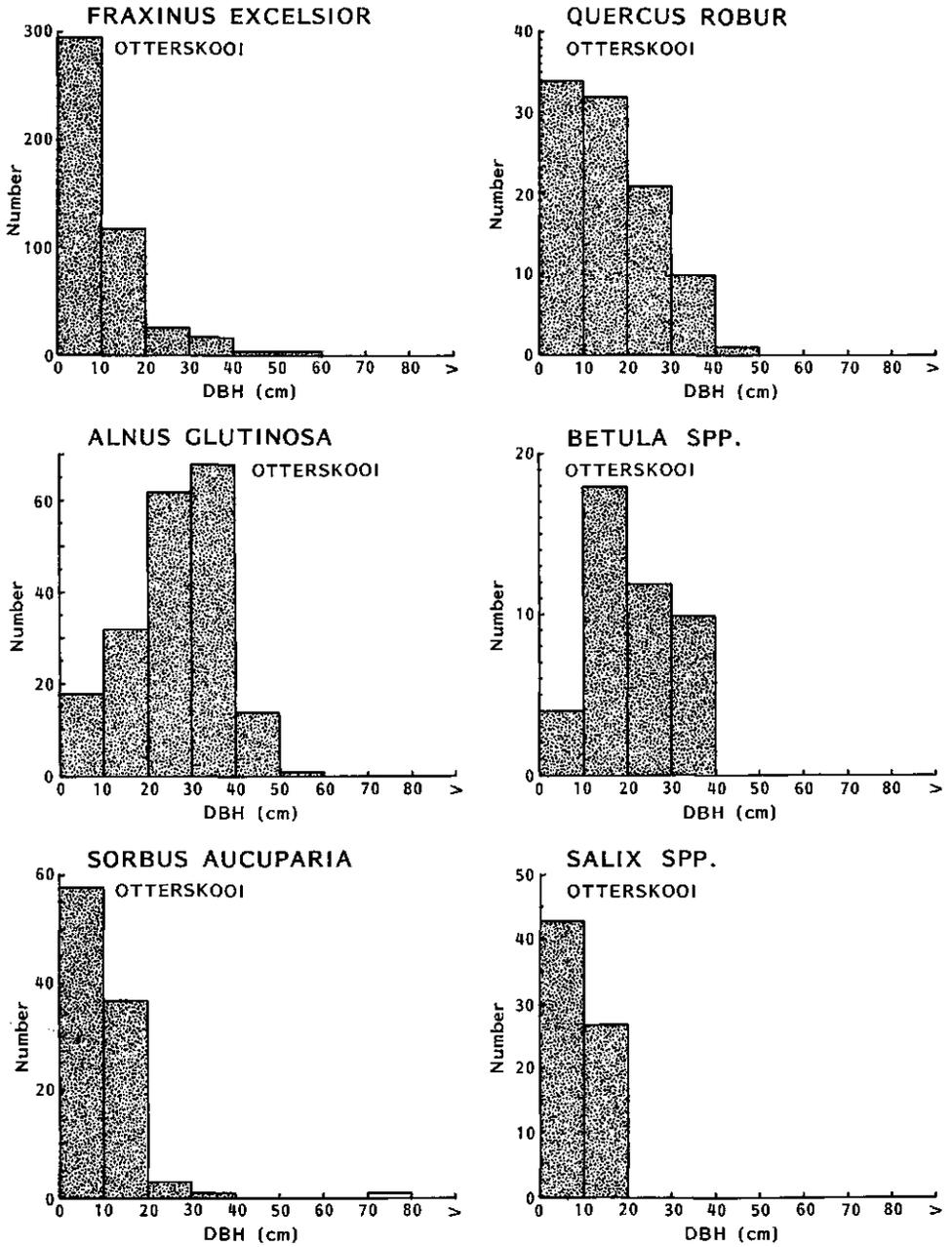


Fig. 8.14. Diameter distribution diagram of *Fraxinus excelsior*, *Quercus robur*, *Alnus glutinosa*, *Betula* spp., *Sorbus aucuparia* and *Salix multinervis*

(Fig. 8.8). In the core area the trees of the past are scarce (Fig. 8.12), which proves the portions of *B. pubescens* and *A. glutinosa* have been detected on the aerial photograph first-tree generation nature of the stands. At present there is no indication of the end of the dominant role for *A. glutinosa*. Compared to phyto-sociological literature, the local vegetation types described above can be best referred to as a *Thelypteris* and a *Carex* variant of the *Carici elongatae-Alnetum* (Van der Werf 1989), the first one being closely related to the *Thelypterido-Alnetum* (Klika 1940).

The *Impatiens* unit, confined to the area with flowing water in and below the floating peat soil, shows the highest portions of *F. excelsior* and *Q. robur* in the upper canopy on the aerial photograph (Fig. 8.8). In the core area in the *Impatiens* and *Ribes* type, the dominant or co-dominant role of *A. glutinosa* in the trees of the past has been taken over by *F. excelsior* in the trees of the present (Fig. 8.13). In the future the set of potential trees will reinforce the dominance of *F. excelsior*. The state of the present forest gives evidence for a development from an *Alnetum* to a *Fraxinetum*. Phyto-sociologically, the local *Ribes* and *Impatiens* types can be regarded as a transition between the *Carici elongatae-Alnetum* and the *Pruno-Fraxinetum* (Van der Werf 1989).

The *Dryopteris*- and *Phragmites* unit, confined to the oldest decoy forest away from the contact zone to flowing water. In species composition of the upper tree canopy, they are intermediate between the two units first discussed (Fig. 8.8). In the core area in the *Dryopteris* type and especially its *Phragmites* variant, *A. glutinosa* is the dominant tree of the present. In the set of trees of the past besides *A. glutinosa*, *B. pubescens* played a co-dominant role. In the set of potential trees, however, *B. pubescens*, *Q. robur* and *F. excelsior* have higher shares than *A. glutinosa* (Fig. 8.13). *A. glutinosa* seems to be retreating and in the future this forest will probably be a mixture of *Q. robur*, *B. pubescens*, *A. glutinosa* and *F. excelsior*. According to Van der Werf (1989), phyto-sociologically the *Dryopteris* type can be best referred to as a subassociation *dryopteritosum* of the *Carici elongatae-Alnetum*, in transition to the *Lysimachio-Quercetum* (Pasarge 1968). This vegetation type shows great similarity to the *Dryopterido-Alnetum* distinguished by Klika (1940).

The *Sorbus* unit grows on floating peat soil with a rather thick litter layer, that is most superficially desiccated. In the core area, in comparison to the *Dryopteris* type, *F. excelsior* has no role of importance in the *Sorbus* type. Its occurrence is restricted to the edges of the unit in transition zones to the ditches. The local *Sorbus* type with a mixture of *B. pubescens*, *A. glutinosa*, *Q. robur* and *S. aucuparia* as potential trees and trees of the present (Fig. 8.13) phyto-sociologically can be considered as a *Lysimachio-Quercetum* (Van der Werf 1989).

The *Calamagrostis* unit is found in the young woodlands at the northern edge of the forest and originates from a *Sphagnion* vegetation (Vlieger 1937). It shows clear phyto-sociological relationship to the *Alno-Betuletum* (Van der Werf 1988). In the core area this variant, however, is only represented as tiny fragments and no conclusions can be drawn from the tree stand.

The forest development deduced from the present forest architecture and species composition has been collated with succession theories in literature (Fig. 8.15). According to Smittenberg (1969, 1976) and Wiegers (1985), a succession line from the *Carici elongatae-Alnetum thelypteridetosum* to the subassociation *caricetosum acutiformis* and finally to the "dry variant" can be expected. The subassociation *betuletosum pubescentis* is expected to develop to the dry variant as well. The authors do not mention a separate subassociation with *Dryopteris*, but the *Dryopteris* type might be considered as part of the "dry variant". The "dry variant", which syntaxonomically was not named by Smittenberg and Wiegers, probably can be identified as the *Lysimachio-Quercetum* (Pasarge 1968; Van der Werf 1989) which is a quite recently described syntaxon.

Monitoring of Forest Dynamics

Tens of years or even centuries of observation are necessary to detect forest dynamics as expressed by architecture and tree species composition (Chap. 7). However, fast initial changes in structure and species composition can be exemplified in young, spontaneous willow stands in Zuidelijk Flevoland, a polder reclaimed in 1968 (The Netherlands). To detect changes in the herb layer composition long sequences of relevés of the 2 x 2 m herbaceous transect area, quadrats would be needed. The oldest relevés now in the information system were first analyzed in 1982 as the project started. Because the Neuenburger Urwald was subject to an earlier study in 1978 and was included in the information system later, data on the Neuenburger Urwald have been used for an interim analysis. The results of this earlier interdisciplinary study (soil science, silviculture and phyto-sociology) in 1978 (Koop 1981) will be briefly summarized before discussing the results of the time series.

9.1 Stand Dynamics in a Spontaneous Willow Forest in Zuidelijk Flevoland, a Polder Reclaimed in 1968 (The Netherlands)

In 1968, the polder Zuidelijk Flevoland was reclaimed. In the construction of the dikes, mats of woven willow rods were used which formed suckers. As soon as the land stood clear of water, seeds produced by these suckers germinated on the bare moist soil. Hoogesteger (1983) used aerial photographs to describe the initial stages of forest development over the area now in the forest reserve of the Wilgenreservaat. In the following years after the initial germination on the bare soil, no other trees became established. Recently, some shrubs of *Sambucus nigra* and *Crataegus monogyna* established themselves.

The Wilgenreservaat is situated along the Knardijk, the north-eastern enclosing dike of the polder Zuidelijk Flevoland. A 0.7 core area was first measured in 1983. The maximum tree height in the reserve is less than 20 m. Therefore the width of the 140-m-long core area was restricted to 50 m, resulting in an surface area of 0.7 ha (see Chap. 2)(Figs. 9.1, 9.2, 9.3). The changes owing to tree death in the core area were reassessed in 1986. These data can be used to show changes in species composition and forest structure.

During the period 1983-1986 mortality was highest among *Salix triandra*, which is a shrubby species (Table 9.2) Among the trees that died we find a high percentage of bent trees, i.e. trees with their tree base beyond their crown projection, especially under *S. triandra* and *S. alba x fragilis*. *Salix alba* showed the lowest percentage of bended trees in 1983, only 14% (Table 9.1). Fifty percent of the trees of this species that died during the period 1983-1986 were bent. Among *S. triandra* the dead trees had a bigger crown surface than those who survived. The bending of the low shrubby species increases the

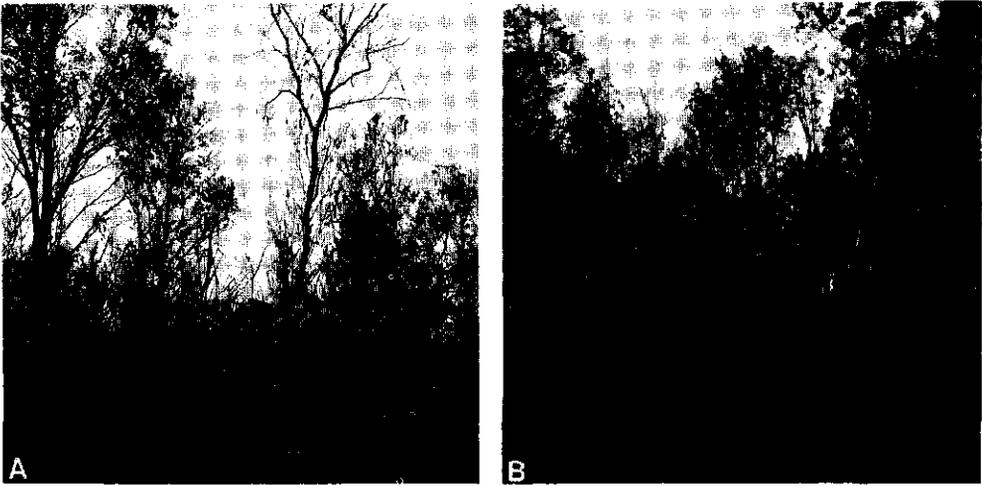


Fig. 9.1. Photographs of the core area Wilgenreservaat (Province Flevoland, The Netherlands, June 1986). The position the photographs were taken is indicated in Figure 9.3. A Dead shrubby *Salix triandra* under an open canopy of *S. alba*. B Canopy gap caused by the death of *Salix triandra* shrubs

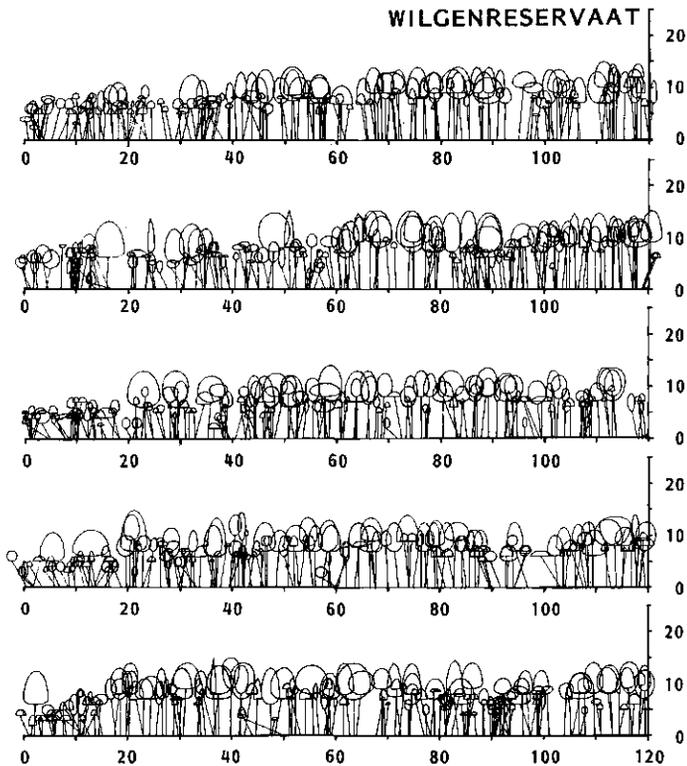


Fig. 9.2. Computer-plotted side views of five adjacent 10-m-wide strip transects in the core area Wilgenreservaat (Province Flevoland, The Netherlands). For reasons of clarity only 120-m length of the transects have been plotted

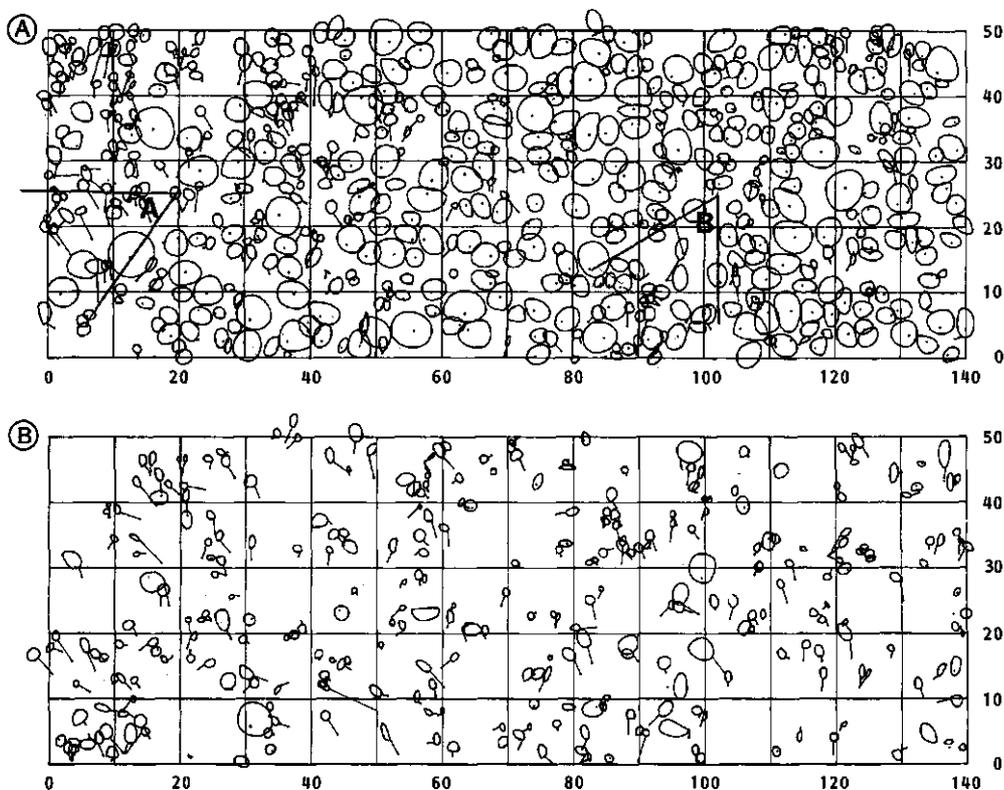


Fig. 9.3. Computer-plotted plans of the core area Wilgenreservaat (Province Flevoland, The Netherlands). The position of the photographs in Fig. 9.1 is indicated. **A** Situation 1983. **B** Trees that died in the period 1983-1986

crown surface. In *S. alba* and *S. alba x fragilis* the trees that died had a smaller crown surface than the surviving trees. The dead trees of the latter species were higher than those of *S. triandra* and had flat crowns. Bending did not increase the crown surface. Only one shrub of *Sambucus nigra* became established in the willow forest already before 1983. Seed sources of other tree species (*Populus* spp., *Fraxinus excelsior*, *Quercus robur*, *Acer pseudoplatanus* and others) have become available in forest plantations at a distance of about 500 meters. In 1983 all 50 adjacent quadrats are covered by 100% *Urtica dioica* only. In 1986 in some plots the cover of *U. dioica* had declined but was not replaced by any other species nor tree seedling. Whether other tree species will be able to colonize the forest before the willows die, and what species these will be, are the main questions to be answered by future monitoring. It is quite possible that the willow forest collapses before other trees have become established. An early collapse might be enhanced by the bacterial disease *Erwinia salicis*.

Table 9.1. Total tree number (*N*), Basal area (*G*), Crown area (*CA*) and the percentage of bent trees per hectare of the core area of the Wilgenreservaat (Province Flevoland, The Netherlands) in 1983

Trees	<i>N</i>	<i>G</i> (m ²)	<i>CA</i> (m ²)	%Bent
<i>Salix triandra</i>	1005	6.14	1462	61
<i>Salix alba x fragilis</i>	77	1.54	567	20
<i>Salix alba</i>	456	8.71	3340	14

Table 9.2. Tree number (*N*), Basal area (*G*), Crown area (*CA*) and the percentage of bent trees per hectare of all trees that died in the period 1983-1986 in the core area of the Wilgenreservaat (Province Flevoland, The Netherlands)

Trees	<i>N</i>	<i>G</i> (m ²)	<i>CA</i> (m ²)	%Bent
<i>Salix triandra</i>	397	2.36	671	82
<i>Salix alba x fragilis</i>	7	0.04	9	80
<i>Salix alba</i>	48	0.56	127	50

In another reserve with similar spontaneous willow forests, the Lepelaarsplassen, transects were drawn by De Coo (1981) and repeated by Burger in 1988 (unpublished). The changes in those transects which were incorporated in the present information system in 1988, are in line with those in the core area of the Wilgenreservaat.

9.2 Herb-Layer Dynamics in Unexploited Beech Forests in the Neuenburger Urwald (Federal Republic of Germany)

The Neuenburger Urwald, a formerly grazed forest between Wilhelmshaven and Oldenburg in Niedersachsen (F.R.G.) has been maintained as a forest reserve since 1870.

Humus-iron-podsol soils (Mückenhausen 1977a, 1977b) in sandy deposits of the Saale glacial period carry a beech-oak forest (*Fago-Quercetum*). Gley brown earths in loamy sands carry a wood millet-beech forest (*Milio-Fagetum*). Gley-pseudogley brown earths in loam, with a stagnating water table on a subsoil, consisting of silty to clayish basin deposits of the Elster glacial period, carry an oak-hornbeam forest (*Stellario-Carpinetum typicum*). The influence of uprooting upon soil conditions and herbaceous species composition has been analyzed. Forest architecture was clearly correlated with soil conditions and forest type. In order of decreasing homogeneity of

structure the forest types were ranked, i.e. beech-oak, wood millet-beech and oak-hornbeam forest respectively. Similarly, the size of the widest canopy gaps decreases from more than two times tree height, to one-and-a-half to two times tree height, to one to one-and-a-half times tree height, in the same order.

Because of the heterogeneous structure of the forests, the floristic composition changes within one forest type. In poletree and thicket phases the number of species is generally lowest. Under small canopy gaps the number of species increases, while in the biggest gaps the number decreases again, because low herbs of the tree phase are superseded by the increasing competition of brambles, honeysuckle or ferns. Because of decreased root competition and absence of interception of precipitation, under canopy gaps species of moist forest types occur in dryer forest types. Beech and holly are the two most important tree species that will determine forest structure in the oak-beech and the wood millet-beech forest in future. Holly maintains itself in the understorey of the beech forests and grows quickly in canopy gaps, whatever their size, unless it is destroyed by falling crowns. In the wood millet-beech forest, holly disappears under larger canopy gaps because of competition from brambles and honeysuckle, or because mice girdle the

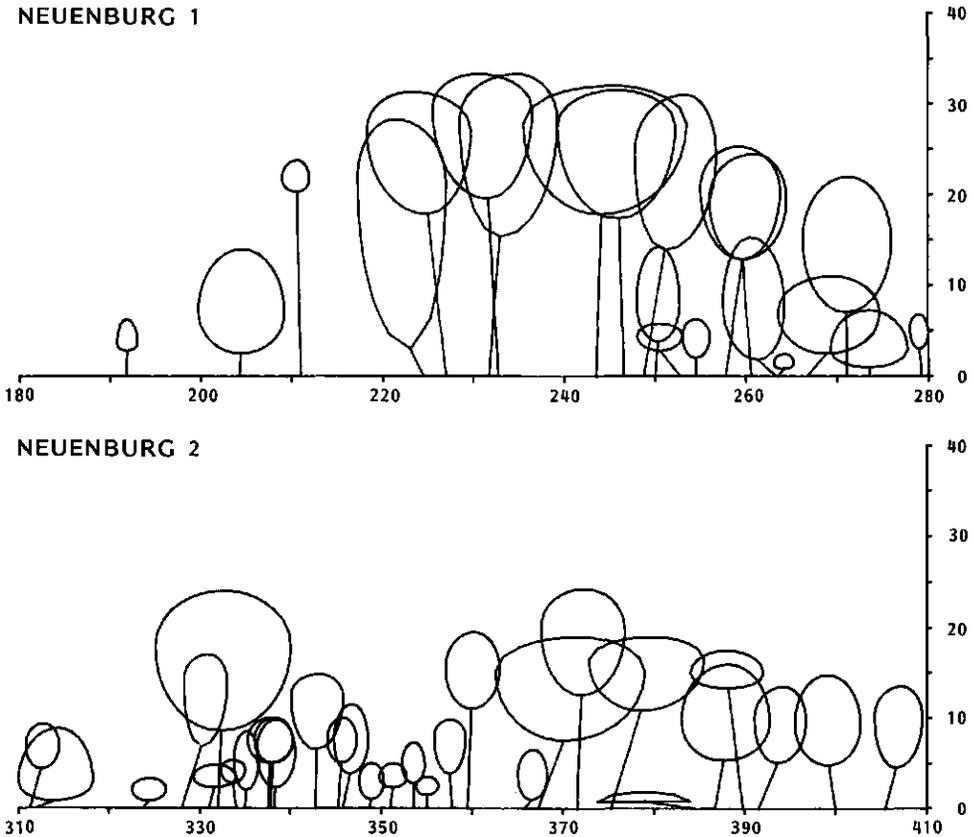


Fig. 9.4. Computer-plotted transect of the transect intervals A 180-280 m and B 310-410 m in the Neuenburger Urwald from Koop (1981), described as *Fago-Quercetum* and *Stellario-Carpinetum*, respectively

Table 9.3. Frequency percentage of species in the four clusters distinguished in the three relevés of 1978, 1981 and 1985 of the *Fago-Quercetum* transect interval 180-280 m in the Neuenburger Urwald. 1 = *Rubus*, 2 = *Dryopteris*, 3 = *Ilex* and 4 = *Milium* cluster

Cluster	1	2	3	4
Number of quadrats	32	29	68	21
* <i>Rubus fruticosus</i>	91	45	3	5
<i>Athyrium filix femina</i>	47	17	3	0
<i>Rubus idaeus</i>	56	52	0	0
* <i>Sorbus aucuparia</i>	25	31	7	0
* <i>Dryopteris dilatata</i>	16	52	0	0
<i>Dryopteris carthusiana</i>	6	62	6	5
<i>Lamium galeobdolon</i>	3	24	0	0
<i>Fagus sylvatica</i>	0	7	1	43
* <i>Milium effusum</i>	0	7	1	57
<i>Anemone nemorosa</i>	0	0	1	57
<i>Oxalis acetosella</i>	9	62	9	67
<i>Carpinus betulus</i>	44	55	37	14
* <i>Hedera helix</i>	75	93	91	71
<i>Ilex aquifolium</i>	16	62	87	57
<i>Agrostis stolonifera</i>	6	0	0	0
<i>Scutellaria galericulata</i>	0	3	0	0
<i>Carex remota</i>	0	3	0	0
<i>Galeopsis tetrahit</i>	0	3	0	0
<i>Acer pseudoplatanus</i>	0	3	0	0
<i>Deschampsia flexuosa</i>	0	0	13	0
<i>Quercus robur</i>	0	0	1	0
<i>Lonicera periclymenum</i>	0	3	3	10

stems in the grassy environment of the clearing. In the oak-beech forest young beeches develop best under the widest canopy gaps. In the wood millet-beech forest they develop best in the relatively small gaps because competition from brambles is too strong in the larger gaps. Based on observations, a forest development cycle is reconstructed. Vegetational, structural minimum areas, in which all representative stages and phases of forest development continue to be present by self-regulation of the forest, were deduced from forest mosaic textures of the different forest types. These are certainly not minimum areas for a number of fauna elements.

Sets of three sequential relevés of quadrats of similar site type were subject to both DECORANA ordination and TWINSpan clustering (Hill 1978a;b). Within the vegetation types *Fago-Quercetum*, *Milium-Fagetum* and *Stellario-Carpinetum*, which were described as different sylvatic mosaics by Koop (1981), transect intervals of 100 m were selected (Fig. 9.4). Data on vegetation composition of only higher plants of the quadrats were available for the years 1978, 1981 and 1985. Per site type, the set of all sequential

relevés of the herbaceous transect area quadrats were clustered with the program TWINSpan and cluster transition during the period 1978-1985 is depicted in cluster transition bars (Figs. 9.6 and 9.8). The species composition of the clusters is represented in Tables 9.3 and 9.4. Species groups have been distinguished and will be referred to by the name of one species that is marked in the table with an asterisk (*). The scores of the relevés against the first two DECORANA axis are plotted (Figs. 9.6 and 9.8). Although the clusters in the diagrams most often overlap, a delineation for relevés belonging to the same cluster is drawn. Transition vectors that connect different year relevés of the same quadrat were drawn to indicate shifts of quadrats through the diagram. For reason of clarity of the figure, however, not all transition vectors could be drawn, but only those that show shifts from one to another cluster.

9.2.1 Herb-Layer Dynamics in a *Fago-Quercetum*

From aerial photographs, before the big storms of 1972 and 1973, the transect interval 180-280 m proved to be a quite homogeneous beech forest (cf. Koop 1981). In the storms, part of it (180-220 m) was thrown over. Data on species composition before the storms are not available. Because of similar soil conditions and similar forest structure before the storm, proved by aerial photographs and forest reconstruction by graphically erecting the thrown beeches (Koop 1981), it seems likely that the species composition did not differ too much from the actual species-poor composition in the unaffected part of the transect interval (220-280 m). TWINSpan clustering of all relevés for the years 1978, 1981 and 1985 of the quadrats resulted in four clusters (Fig. 9.6, Table 9.3).

The first cluster (referred to as *Rubus* cluster) has high frequency and coverage of the *Rubus fruticosus* group and the *Sorbus aucuparia* group. Except for the *Hedera helix* group, all other species have a low frequency (Table 9.1). This cluster was found in the wind-thrown part of the transect in 1978 (Fig. 9.5). It appeared as a continuous blanket of lianes, except for some quadrats underneath the *Carpinus betulus* tree that had survived the storm. In 1981 and 1985 the extent of quadrats belonging to the *Rubus* cluster decreased gradually. In 1985 it was only found in the centre of the widest remaining canopy gap. The species of the *R. fruticosus* group are light-demanding, while the presence of *Athyrium filix femina* reflects the higher soil moisture in a gap (Koop 1981).

The second cluster (referred to as *Dryopteris* cluster) shows a remarkably lower frequency of the *Rubus fruticosus* group. Together the *Rubus* cluster and the *Dryopteris* cluster are characterized by the *Sorbus aucuparia* group. High frequency of the *Dryopteris dilatata* group and *Oxalis acetosella* is typical for the *Dryopteris* cluster. The *Dryopteris* cluster has spread since 1978 and succeeds the *Rubus* cluster (Fig. 9.5). In the closed beech forest, isolated patches appeared and disappeared underneath small canopy gaps.

The third cluster (referred to as *Ilex* cluster) is characterized by the highest cover of *Ilex aquifolium* in a low shrub layer. Except for *Deschampsia flexuosa* and species of the *Hedera helix* group all other species have a low presence. The *Ilex* cluster is found under a closed canopy of the beech forest in the transect interval 220-266 m. At the edge of the clearing in 1985 a transition from the *Rubus* cluster towards the *Ilex* cluster could be observed. This transition was due to closing of the canopy of *Ilex* shrubs, which were released from a beech canopy during the storm. Before the storms the *Rubus* cluster in the open part of the transect interval will probably have been preceded by the *Ilex*

cluster, as is now found in the second unaffected part of the transect. A frequent transition *Rubus-Dryopteris* occurred. In a few cases there was a transition from the *Rubus* to the *Dryopteris* back to the *Ilex* cluster. Therefore the sequence *Ilex*, *Rubus*, *Dryopteris*- back to the *Ilex* cluster can be regarded as the "most complete cycle" after the disturbance caused by the 1972-1973 storms.

The fourth cluster (referred to as *Milium* cluster) consists of the last seven quadrats at the end of the transect interval (266-280 m). They represent a transition to the *Milio-Fagetum*. It is characterized by high coverage of *Oxalis acetosella* and the *Milium effusum* group. During the years 1978-1985 its species composition hardly changed. Only in two quadrats did a transition to the *Ilex* cluster take place, probably caused by dense shade.

In Figure 9.6b the scores of all relevés on the first and second DECORANA ordination axis are plotted. The sequence of the *Rubus*, the *Dryopteris* and the *Ilex* cluster is clearly found along the first axis. This allows the first axis to be interpreted as canopy cover. Simultaneously the nitrogen indication according to Ellenberg (1974) decreases as well for the specific groups (6.2-5.7-5.0), which can be explained by nitrification of the litter layer. Coverage in the *Ilex* cluster is high in the tree canopy. Differences in coverage between the *Rubus* and the *Dryopteris* cluster are caused by closing regeneration of *Ilex aquifolium*, *Sorbus aucuparia* and *Fagus sylvatica*. It is striking that part of the *I. aquifolium* as well as the *F. sylvatica* treelets regenerated vegetatively (Koop 1987). Figure 9.6 shows the increasing values of the first DECORANA axis in time. The sequence on the second axis corresponds with the transition to another sylvatic unit.

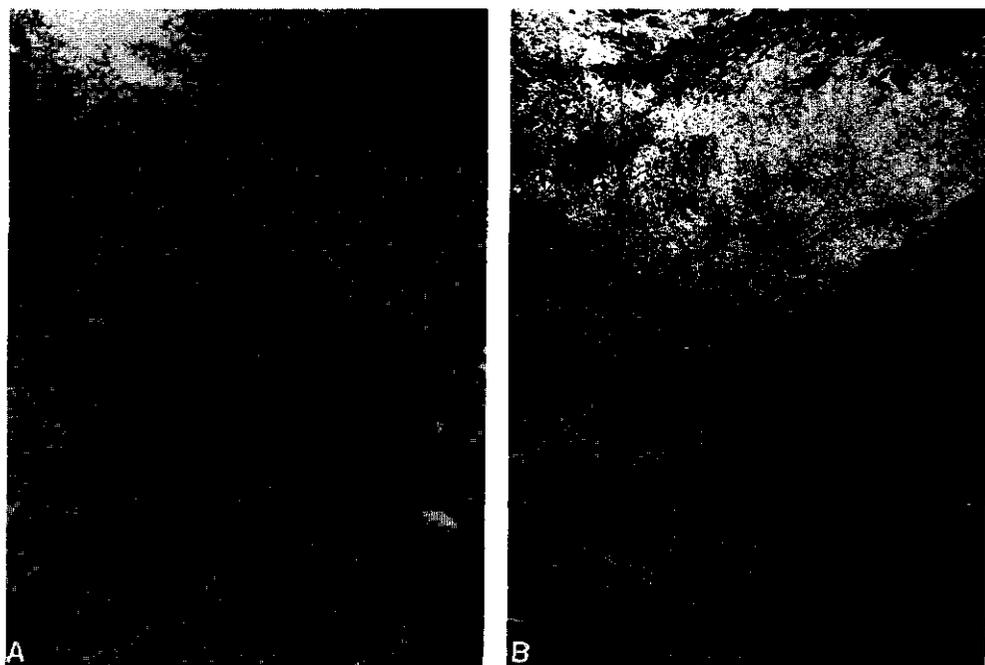
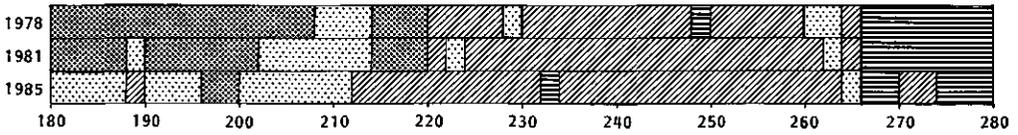
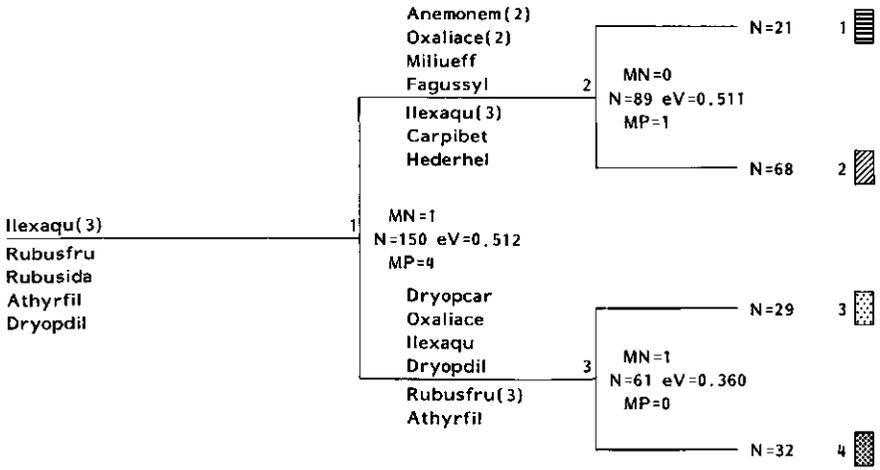


Fig. 9.5. Photographs of the herbaceous transect interval 180-190 in Neuenburger Urwald (Niedersachsen, F.R.G.). **A** In June 1977 the ground vegetation was dominated by *Rubus fruticosus* (*Rubus* cluster). **B** In June 1985 the same area carried a *Dryopteris dilatata*-dominated vegetation (*Dryopteris* cluster)

(A)



(B)

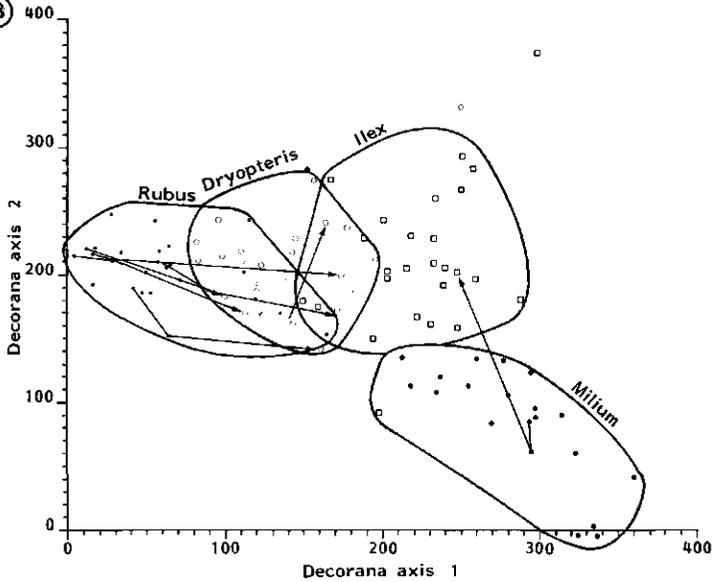


Fig. 9.6. A TWINSPAN dendrogram and cluster transition bar of the set of sequential relevés of the herbaceous transect area of the *Fago-Quercetum* 1978-1981-1985. 1=*Milium*, 2=*Ilex*, 3=*Dryopteris* and 4=*Rubus* cluster. B Plotted scores of the relevés against the first two DECORANA axis. Relevés belonging to the same TWINSPAN cluster are delineated. Transition vectors that connect different year relevés of the same quadrat are drawn to indicate shifts of quadrats through the diagram. For reasons of clarity of the figure, however, not all transition vectors could be drawn, but only those that show shifts that are cluster transitions

9.2.2 Herb-Layer Dynamics in a *Stellario-Carpinetum*

The transect interval 310-410 m is a heterogeneous mixed oak-hornbeam forest (*Stellario-Carpinetum*). During the period of observation 1978-1985 a canopy gap in a poletree phase in the interval 312-326 closed by a spread of neighbouring trees crowns. In the transect interval at two places a crown of a tree from beyond the transect limits fell into the transect. In 1984 an old oak fell down and created a new canopy gap. Four clusters were distinguished (Fig. 9.8 Table 9.4).

The first cluster (referred to as *Oreopteris* cluster) is characterized by high frequency and cover of ferns, mainly *Oreopteris limbosperma*. Lower species such as those of the *Oxalis* group are very scarce except for *Anemone nemorosa*, that flowers before the ferns close their canopy and then disappears for the rest of the year. With the *Stellaria* cluster this cluster has the *A. nemorosa* group in common. *Phegopteris connectilis* most frequently appears in this cluster. The species grows exclusively on the mounds of uprootings (Koop 1981). Together with the cluster as a whole the species, however, fades away as the site becomes overcast. As the canopy gap closes during the years 1981 and 1985, relevés of this cluster disappear. On the most shaded spots they move to the *Hedera* cluster and in the edges of the poletree phase to the *Stellaria* cluster.

A second cluster (referred to as *Stellaria* cluster) is widely spread throughout the transect interval, mostly underneath oak trees (Fig. 9.7). It is characterized by the highest number of species and the highest cover of the *A. nemorosa* group. Minor shifts from the *Stellaria*- to the *Hedera* cluster occurred during the period of observation.

The third cluster (referred to as *Hedera* cluster) is the cluster poorest in species. Only species of the *Oxalis acetosella* and the *Dryopteris dilatata* group occur. All light-demanding species such as those of the *Rubus fruticosus* group are scarce. The relevés belonging to this cluster occur underneath a closed canopy mostly of *Carpinus betulus* or of a shrub layer of *Ilex aquifolium* or *Fagus sylvatica*. Relevés of all other clusters can change towards this *Hedera* cluster when they suffer from heavy overcast (Fig. 9.5).

The fourth cluster (referred to as *Lonicera* cluster) is characterized by a high frequency of the *Rubus fruticosus* group just as the *Stellaria* cluster, but it has much lower frequencies of the *A. nemorosa* and the *O. acetosella* groups. Opposite to the *Oreopteris* cluster with a dense canopy of big ferns, here the smaller ferns *Dryopteris carthusiana* and *D. dilatata* play an important role. Although very rare, the species *Polypodium vulgare*, *Deschampsia flexuosa* and *Blechnum spicant* indicate the rather acid character of the relevés. Quadrats belonging to this cluster are found in the areas of rotting woody debris of more or less collapsed crowns of uprooted trees.

In the DECORANA graph (Fig. 9.8b) the first axis can be interpreted as canopy cover. Low values coincide with the shaded *Hedera* cluster and high values with the open *Oreopteris* cluster. In this respect the *Lonicera* cluster is partly covered by collapsing tree crowns. The explanation of the second axis might be acidity. The most extreme values



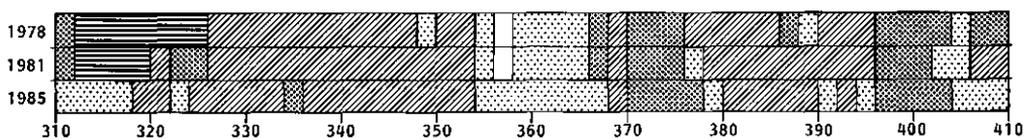
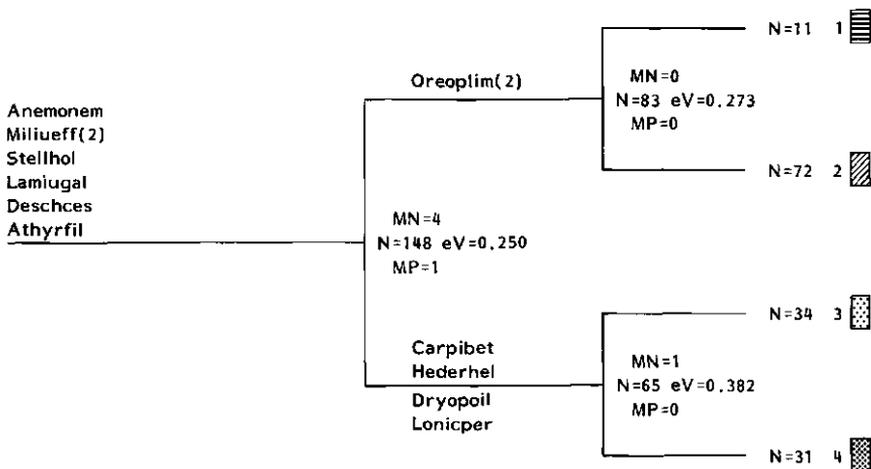
Fig. 9.7. Photograph of the herbaceous transect in the *Stellario-Carpinetum* in Neuenburger Urwald (Niedersachsen F.R.G.) June 1985. **A** *Hedera* cluster in transect interval 310-320 m. **B** *Stellaria* cluster in transect interval 330-350 m

Table 9.4. Presence percentage of species in the four clusters distinguished in the three relevés of 1978, 1981 and 1985 of the *Stellario-Carpinetum* transect interval 310-410 m in the Neuenburger Urwald. 1=*Oreopteris*, 2=*Stellaria*, 3=*Hedera* and 4=*Lonicera* cluster.

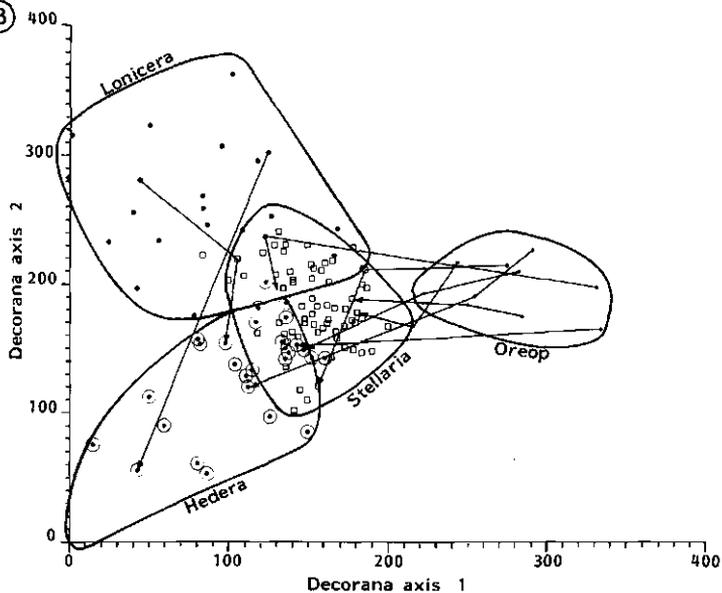
Cluster	1	2	3	4
Number of quadrats:	11	72	34	31
<i>Oreopteris limbosperma</i>	100	1	0	0
<i>Phegopteris connectilus</i>	27	19	0	0
<i>Lamium galeobdolon</i>	36	60	6	3
<i>Deschampsia cespitosa</i>	73	68	20	29
<i>Athyrium filix femina</i>	36	58	26	13
* <i>Anemone nemorosa</i>	91	80	18	3
<i>Milium effusum</i>	64	92	12	16
* <i>Oxalis acetosella</i>	0	94	47	42
<i>Stellaria holostea</i>	18	69	12	10
<i>Ilex aquifolium</i>	0	18	32	10
<i>Carpinus betulus</i>	0	75	94	32
<i>Hedera helix</i>	64	35	50	13
* <i>Dryopteris dilatata</i>	45	50	23	61
<i>Dryopteris carthusiana</i>	0	29	35	55
<i>Lonicera perichyenum</i>	18	35	6	52
* <i>Rubus fruticosus</i>	9	39	9	26
<i>Rubus idaeus</i>	9	28	0	29
<i>Juncus effusus</i>	9	0	0	0
<i>Carex remota</i>	0	3	0	0
<i>Agrostis stolonifera</i>	0	1	0	0
<i>Frangula alnus</i>	0	4	0	0
<i>Poa nemoralis</i>	0	3	0	0
<i>Galeopsis tetrahit</i>	0	8	3	0
<i>Sorbus aucuparia</i>	0	16	3	6
<i>Quercus robur</i>	0	16	6	6
<i>Fagus sylvatica</i>	0	12	12	16
<i>Deschampsia flexuosa</i>	0	0	0	3
<i>Polypodium vulgare</i>	0	0	0	6
<i>Blechnum spicant</i>	0	0	0	3

Fig. 9.8. A TWINSPAN dendrogram and cluster transition bar of the set of sequential relevés of the herbaceous transect area of the *Stellario-Carpinetum* 1978-1981-1985. 1=*Oreopteris*, 2=*Stellaria*, 3=*Hedera* and 4=*Lonicera* cluster. **B** Plotted scores of the relevés against the first two DECORANA axis. Relevés belonging to the same TWINSPAN cluster are delineated. Transition vectors that connect different year relevés of the same quadrat are drawn to indicate shifts of quadrats through the diagram. For reason of clarity of the figure, however, not all transition vectors could be drawn but only those that show characteristic shifts

(A)



(B)



on this axis are noted for the *Lonicera* cluster on acid substrate that is found on the woody debris, although the low values on this axis for the species-poor *Hedera* cluster do not allow these to be interpreted as less acid.

9.2.3 Conclusion

In conclusion, the clearest shift in species composition has been observed in dynamic gap eco-units that closed during the time period of the study. Differences in time can be best analyzed in sets of relevés where differences in abiotic site are slight. For example, the fourth cluster of the *Fago-Quercetum* transect interval, that has been interpreted as a spatial transition to the *Milium-Fagetum*, has no genetic relation to the other three clusters distinguished.

Studies of Variables in Different Forest Areas

In this Chapter an arbitrary selection for comparison is made of variables that are available or can be computed from the forest model. The possibilities of deducing variables for different purposes are far from exhausted, and as yet have only been partly explored. Relations between parameters by which surface and volume can be expressed and which can be easily measured have been studied by many authors. Such relations play an important role in prediction models for forest structure development. Some of those relations between tree measures will be analyzed.

10.1 Crown Area Index and Crown Cover Index

Two measures of canopy density have been computed from the model with the program ARBOSUM (see Appendix).

First, the sum of projected crown areas of all life trees is computed and expressed as the total projected crown area above unit area of ground surface (Crown Area Index) according to Oldeman (1974a).

Second, the sum of projected crown areas multiplied with the inner crown cover per tree is computed and expressed as the real crown cover per area of ground surface (Crown Cover Index). These measures have been compared for a number of sites. In future, when records of the core areas are repeated, these measures can be used for comparing shifts in canopy density and in species composition (Table 10.1).

Table 10.1. Different core areas compared for the following values: Crown Area Index (C.A.I.) which is the total projected crown area per unit area of ground surface. The crown cover index (C.C.I.) is C.A.I. corrected per crown with the inner crown cover. The table also gives total crown volume (V_{cr}) and Basal area (G)

	C.A.I.	C.C.I.	$V_{cr}(m^3)$	$G(m^2/ha)$
Bialowieza 256	1.645	1.022	105978	29.55
Fontainebleau I	1.434	1.055	126372	26.57
Fontainebleau II	1.583	1.118	130402	23.41
Ile de Rhinau	1.888	1.055	108444	24.75
Noordhout	1.437	0.942	83747	25.08
Otterskooi	1.349	0.802	56376	23.31

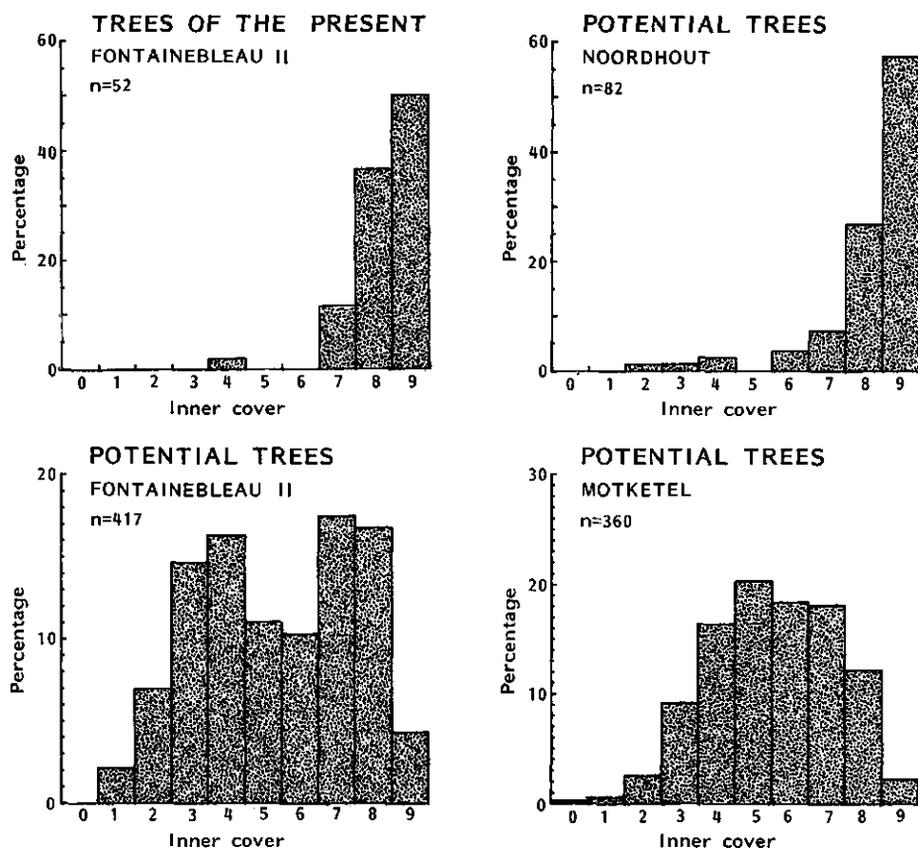


Fig. 10.1. Inner crown cover frequency diagrams of *Fagus sylvatica* in Noordhout, the Motketel (both The Netherlands) and in Fontainebleau II (France)

It is remarkable that the real C.C.I. is about the same for all the core areas. It does not matter what the values are of C.A.I., crown volume, basal area, the C.C.I. is about 1. Only the core area of the Otterskooi, which is an open fen woodland that passed a recent phase of decay (Chap. 7), has much lower figures for all variables.

10.2 Crown Cover per Tree Species

For numerous individual trees, the cover within the crown projection has been assessed. These data allow an analysis of the crown cover per tree species. Distributions of crown cover classes (see Appendix) per tree species will be compared. Differences for potential trees and trees of the present will be analyzed.

10.2.1 Crown Cover of Beech (*Fagus sylvatica*)

Suppressed shaded beech trees show lower inner crown cover than exposed trees. How the trees are distributed over the cover classes depends on the positions occupied by beeches in a certain forest build-up. This can be demonstrated by the beeches in the three core areas.

In the forest reserve Noordhout (The Netherlands), all beeches are potential trees that occur in low densities under a decaying, light-transmitting canopy of *Pinus sylvestris*. As can be seen in Figs. 5.2 and 5.3, the crown projections only overlap in their peripheral zone in the profile. Also the beech trees are of the same height and do not outshade each other. About 60% of all trees shows cover 9. The median value of distribution amounts to 9 (Fig. 10.1).

In the forest reserve of the Motketel (The Netherlands), beeches occur under a similar canopy of *P. sylvestris* as in Noordhout. The set of potential beeches, however, is much more heterogeneous in height and crown projection area. Many trees are outshaded by other beech trees. The range of inner crown cover classes in the frequency diagram (Fig. 10.1) is much wider. Only a few emerging trees show the highest cover and many trees in the shade show low inner tree covers. The median value of distribution amounts to only 6.

The forest reserve of Fontainebleau (France) is a pure beech forest. The set of the present as well as the potential set is occupied by beeches. The structuring trees belonging to the set of the present show a similar distribution in inner crown cover as the set of the potential trees in the core area of Noordhout (Fig. 10.1). The set of the present in Noordhout consists of light-transmitting *Pinus sylvestris*. The set of potential trees of Fontainebleau, however, is partly shaded by the set of the present of beeches and shows much lower inner tree covers. The distribution diagram shows two tops. One top, around the cover value 8, represents the potential trees that almost reached the upper canopy and occupy the relatively illuminated zones between the emergents. The second maximum, around the cover value 4, represents the suppressed trees in the deep shade below.

10.2.2 Crown Cover of Ash (*Fraxinus excelsior*) and Oak (*Quercus robur*)

The differences in cover distributions of the set of the present and the set of potential trees of *Fraxinus excelsior* and *Quercus robur* can be explained in a similar way as in *F. sylvatica*.

The most frequent cover class in the set of the present of *F. excelsior* in the core area of the Otterskooi is 7 (at the same time median value). The distribution diagram of the set of potential trees shows again two tops, but these are not as clear as in the beeches in Fontainebleau. The maximum around 7 represents the trees just underneath the upper canopy. The second maximum represents the numerous wilting treelets in the forest undergrowth (Fig. 10.2). The median value in the set of the present of *F. excelsior* in the core area of the Ile de Rhinau is 7. The median value for the set of potential trees is only 4 (Fig. 10.2).

The distribution diagrams of trees of the present and potential trees of *Q. robur* in the core areas of the Otterskooi and Noordhout are very similar to those of *F. excelsior* (Fig. 10.3). In the core area of the Norgerholt, only a set of the present of *Q. robur* exists. These trees have the same median value 7 as the trees of the present of *Q.*

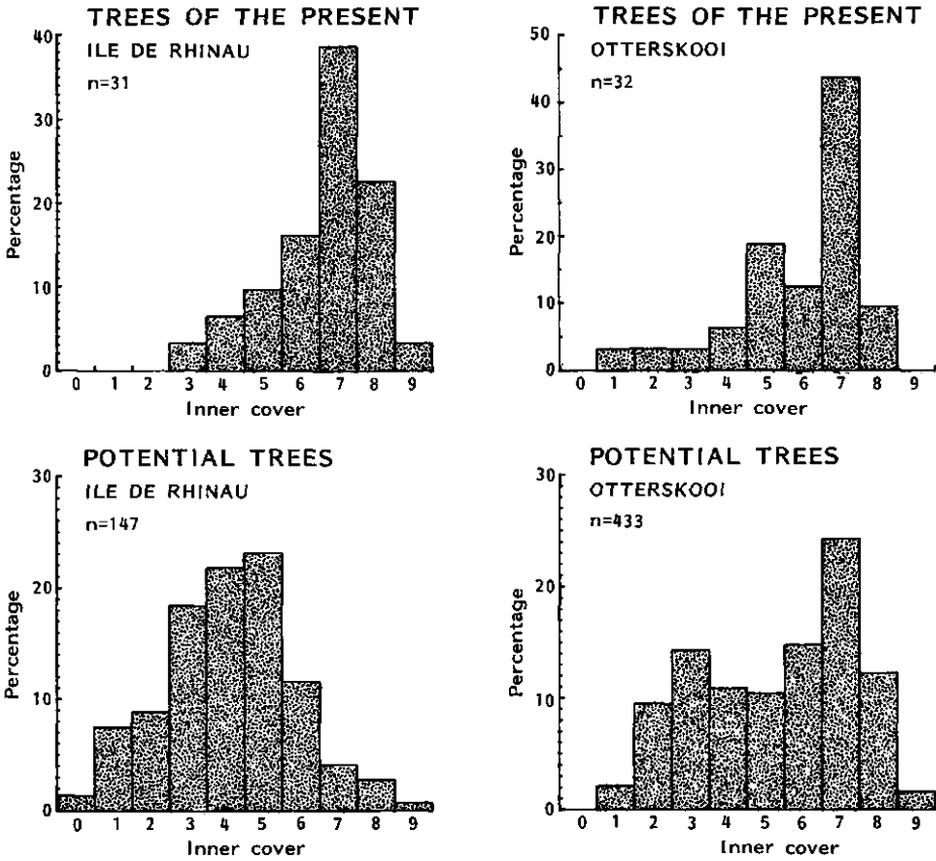


Fig. 10.2. Inner crown cover frequency diagrams of trees of the present and potential trees of *Fraxinus excelsior* in the Otterskooi (The Netherlands) and in the Ile de Rhinau (France)

robur in the Otterskooi and Noordhout.

Specific inner crown cover can clearly be distinguished in the set of the present. The trees of the present of *F. sylvatica* have the highest values of inner crown cover 9. *F. excelsior* and *Q. robur* both have a lower crown cover value of 7. In the more or less shaded set of potential trees, competition for light determines the inner crown cover. Shaded crowns develop an open mono-layered crown while crowns that have reached higher light levels develop multi-layered dense crowns.

10.3 Relation Between Diameter of the Crown and Diameter of the Bole

The relationship between crown diameter and diameter of the bole has been studied by, e.g. Ilvessalo (1950), Erteld (1979) and Dawkins (1963). Erteld (1979) for *Pinus sylvestris* reports a non-linear relationship that reaches near maximum for crown surface with increasing basal area.

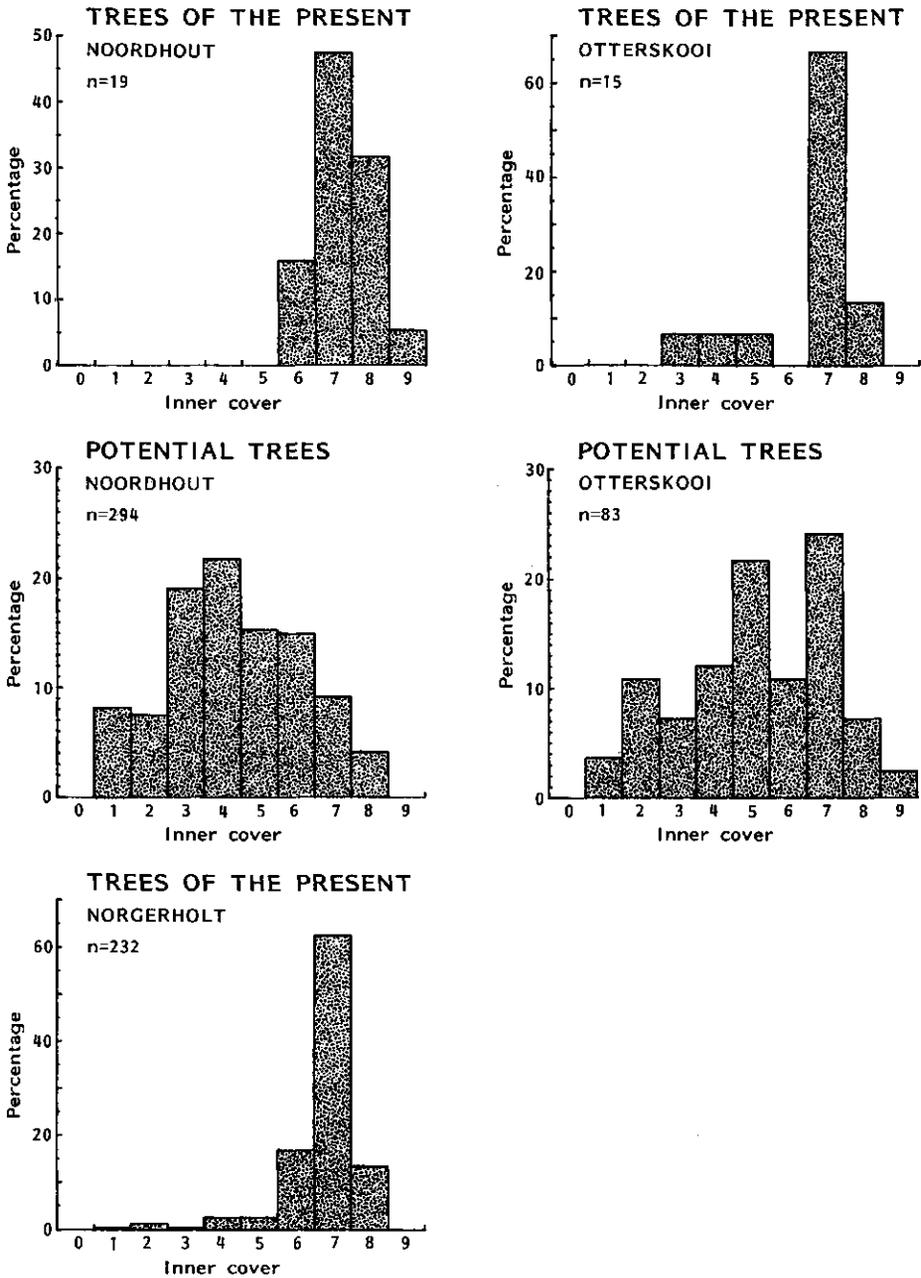


Fig. 10.3. Inner crown cover frequency diagrams of trees of the present and potential trees of *Quercus robur* in Noordhout, the Otterskooi and the Norgerholt (all The Netherlands)

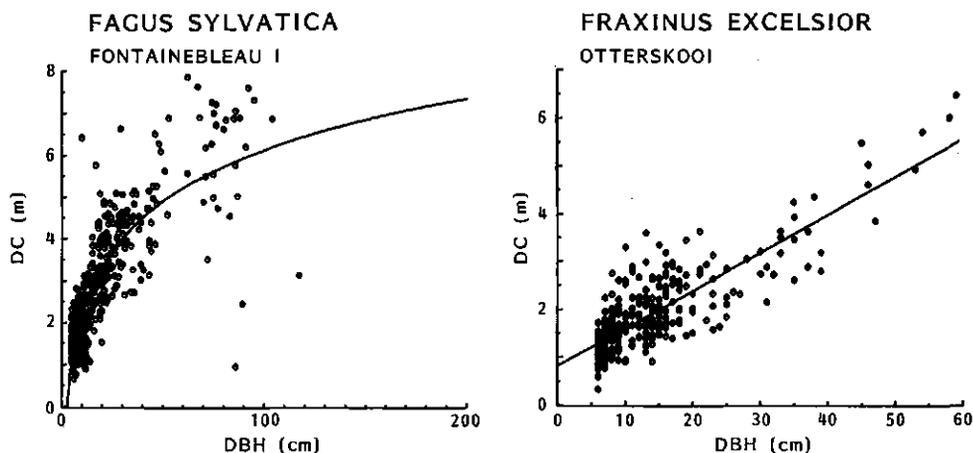


Fig. 10.4. Examples of regressions of diameter of the crown (DC) in metres against the DBH in cm. *Fagus sylvatica* proved to give best results with a logarithmic regression while in all other tree species linear regression gave best results

For most tree species linear regression provided the best fitting except for *Fagus sylvatica* in La Tillaie (Fontainebleau), where logarithmic regression proved better (Fig. 10.4). Although values for trees with a diameter at breast height < 5 cm were not measured, all C coefficients amount to about 1 m. This means that trees with a $DBH=0$, which they have at the moment they surmount the breast height (1.3 m), already have a crown diameter of about 1 m. For some species the relationship between DBH and crown diameter is very diffuse. Especially *Alnus glutinosa*, *Prunus padus* and *Pinus sylvestris* show values lower than 40% of the variance accounted for by the regression. This can partly be explained by the fact that many trees of *P. padus* and of *A. glutinosa* are bending. Because of bending of the tree crown the relationship may be distorted. By bending, the crown area has become larger, compared to an upright tree. Trunks of the same girth of the different species carry crowns of different crown diameters. In Table IX.2 per core area the species have been sorted to increasing ratio of crown diameter against DBH .

Pioneer species such as *Pinus sylvestris*, *Betula pubescens* and *Alnus glutinosa* have the lowest ratios of crown diameter against DBH and at the same time a low percentage of variance accounted for. In all core areas they are in a starting phase of decline, which possibly may explain the diffuse relationship.

If the tree species with the best fitting of regressions ($VAF > 50\%$) are sorted according to an increasing ratio of crown diameter against DBH , we find the sequence *Picea abies*, *Quercus robur*, *Fraxinus excelsior*, *Carpinus betulus*, *Sorbus aucuparia* (Table 10.2). Any explanation for this fact has to be hypothetical as long as evidence is so scarce. One explanation might be found in the growth model (Hallé et al. 1978). Trees with a growth model with more frequent and spreading reiteration such as the model of Rauh in *Quercus robur*, and Roux in *Betula* spp. and Troll in *Fagus sylvatica* and *Carpinus betulus*, might have higher ratios of crown diameter against DBH than the model of Massart in *P. abies*. Another explanation of the above-mentioned sequence may be found in the structural ensemble to which the trees belong. The trees that belong to the upper

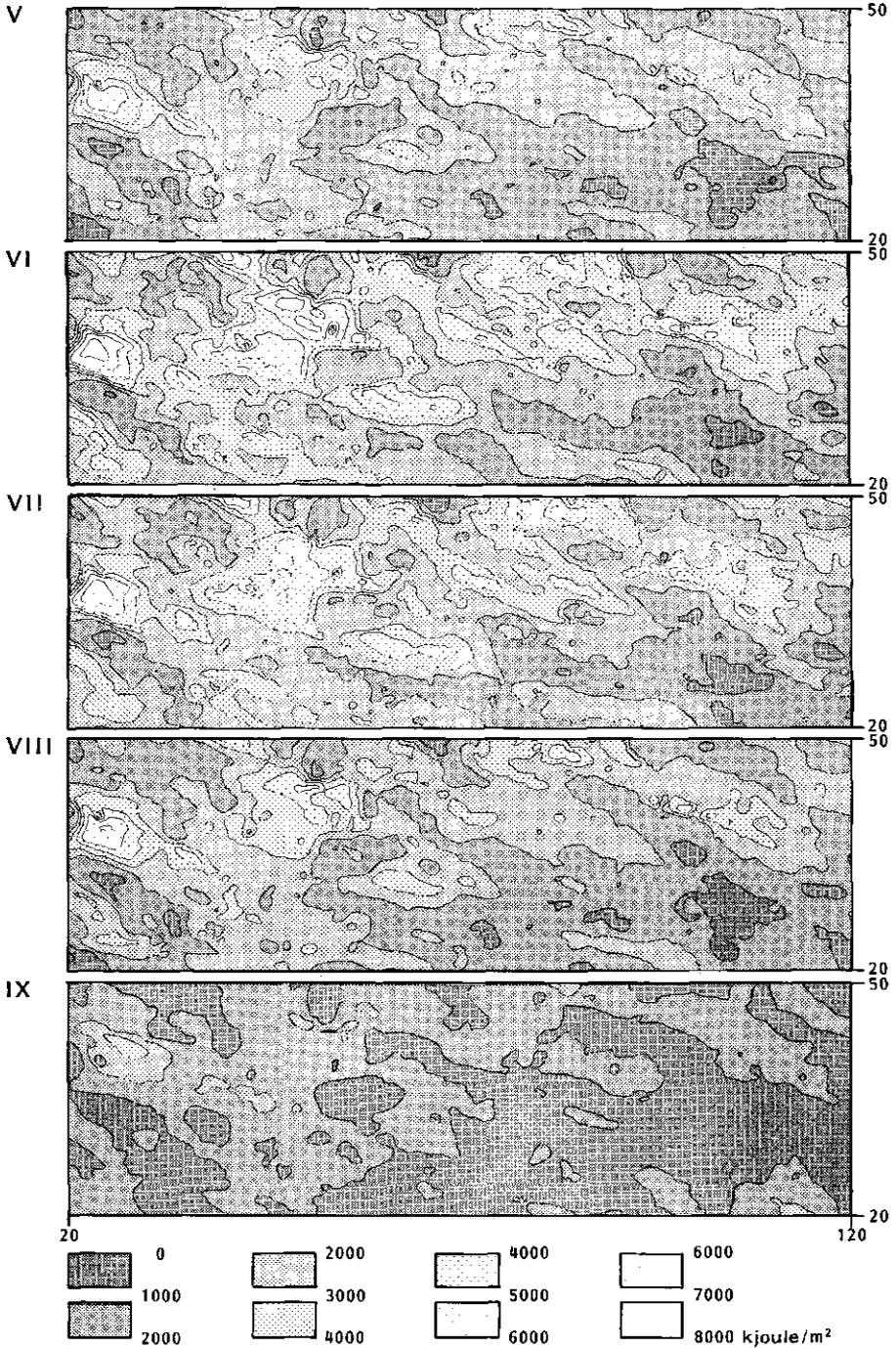


Fig. 11.1. Contour lines of radiation values of direct radiation at ground level in the central 100 x 30 m block of the core area of the Otterskooi as computed by the program FOREYE over the months May-June-July-August-September (V to IX).50-100 years

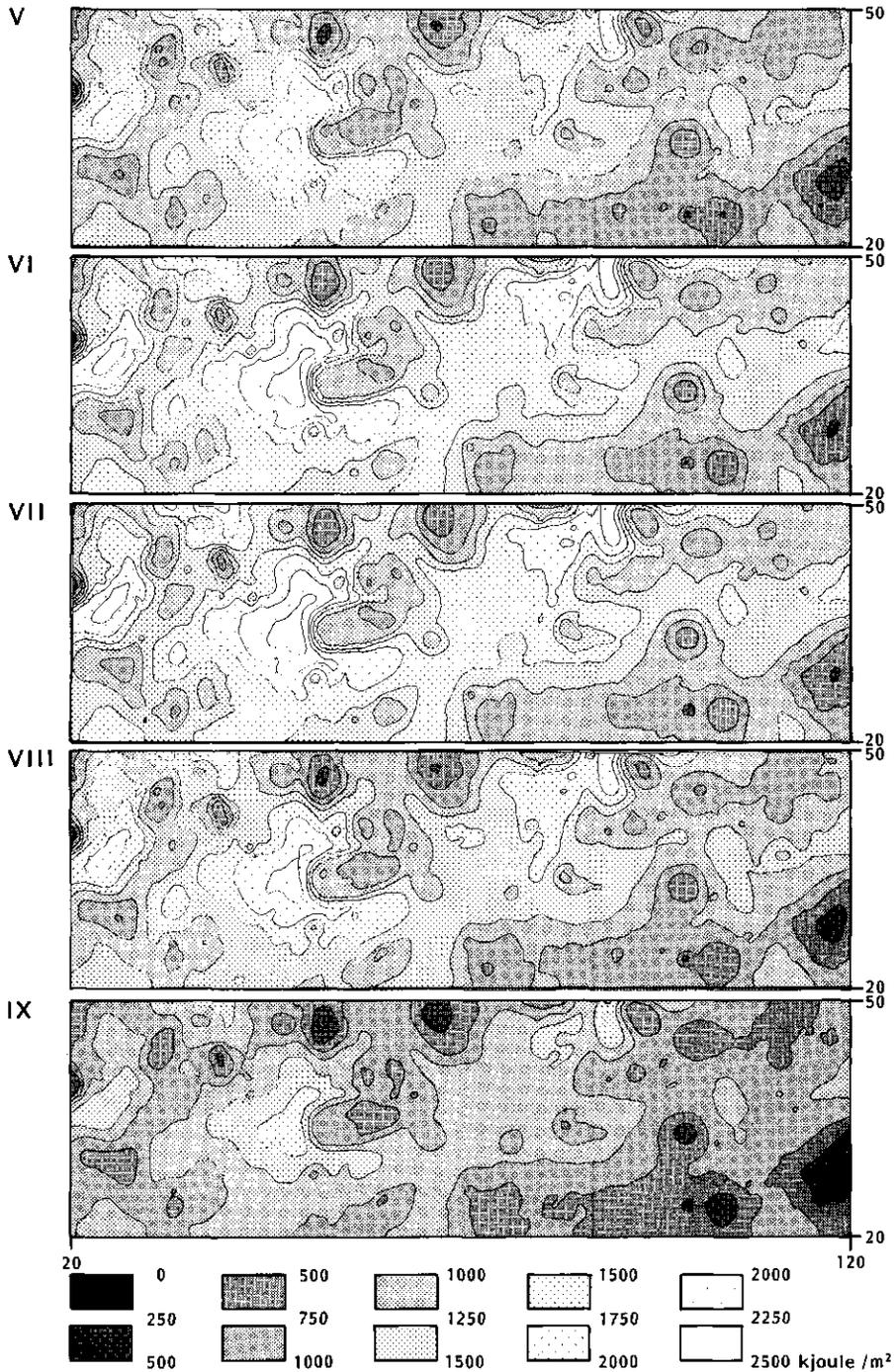


Fig. 11.2. Contour lines of radiation values of diffuse radiation at ground level in the central 100 x 30 m block of the core area of the Otterskooi as computed by the program FOREYE over the months May-June-Juli-August-September (V to IX).

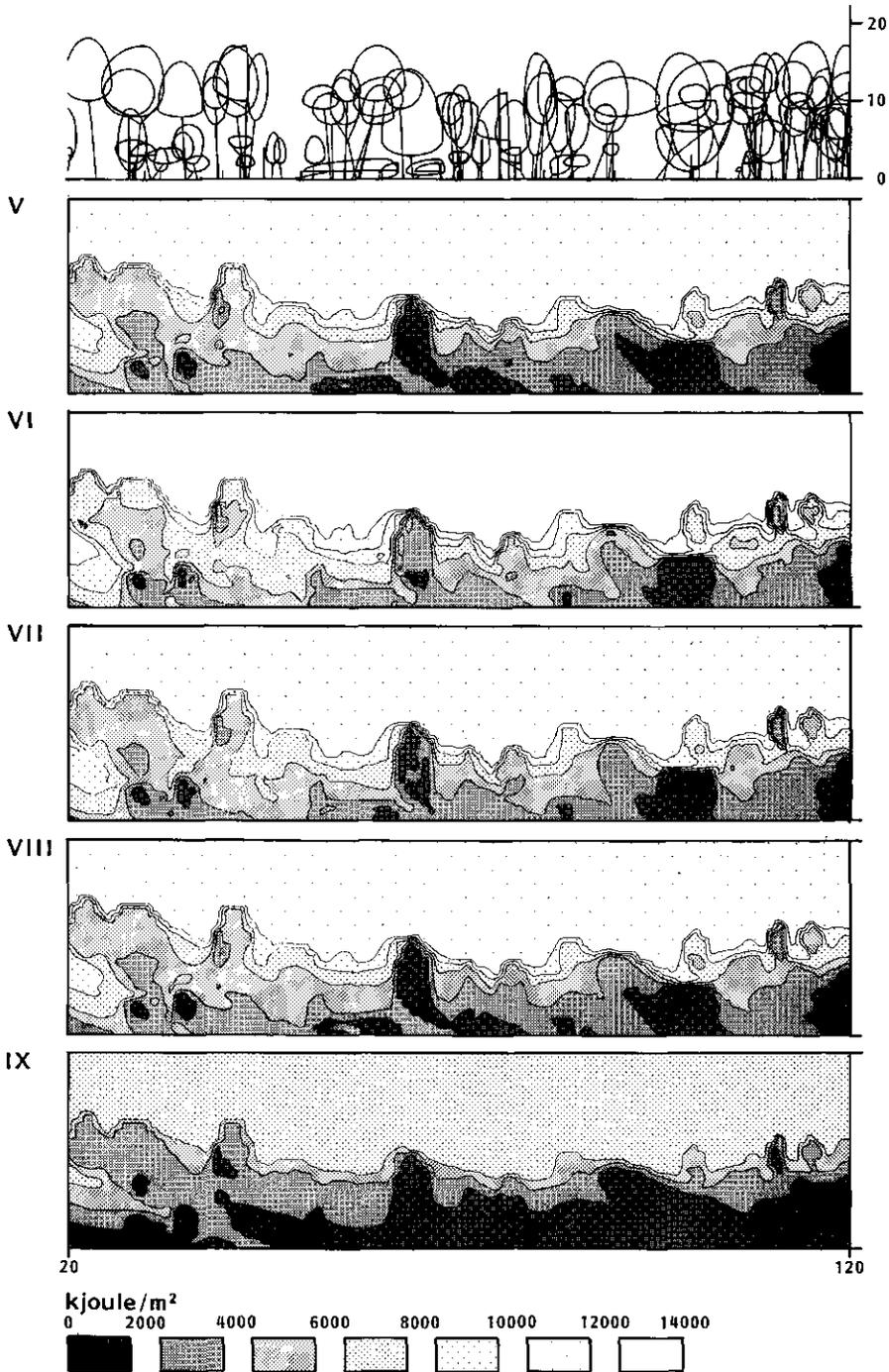


Fig. 11.3. Contour lines of radiation values of direct radiation in a vertical plane at the middle of the woody species transect area of the Otterskooi as computed by the program FOREYE over the months May-June-July-August-September (V to IX).

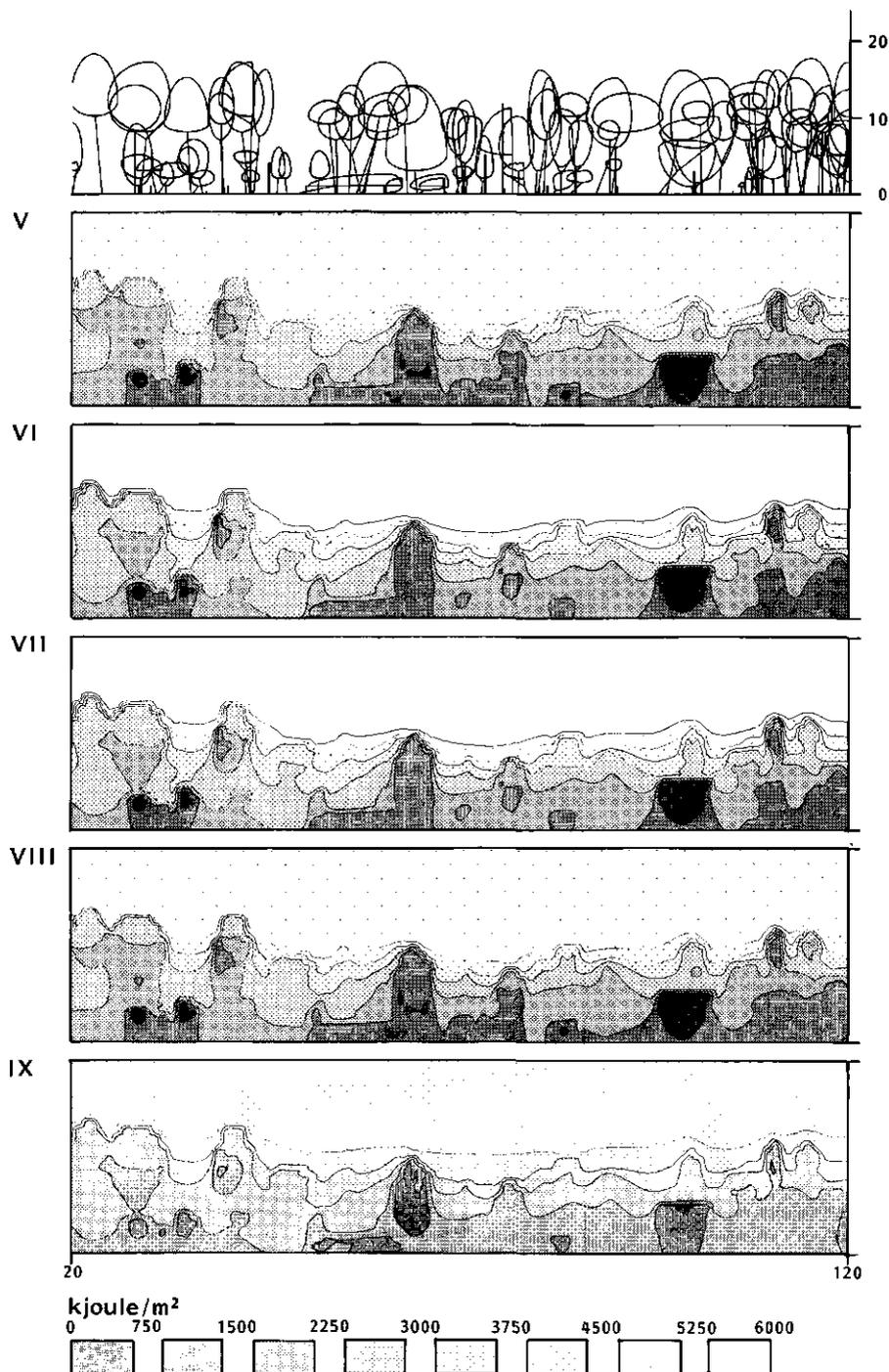


Fig. 11.4. Contour lines of radiation values of diffuse radiation in a vertical plane at the middle of the woody species transect area of the Otterskooi as computed by the program FOREYE over the months May-June-July-August-September (V to IX)

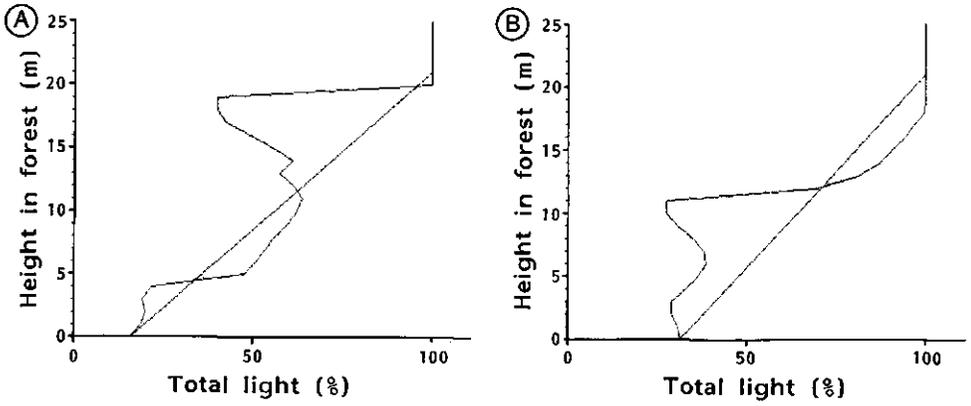
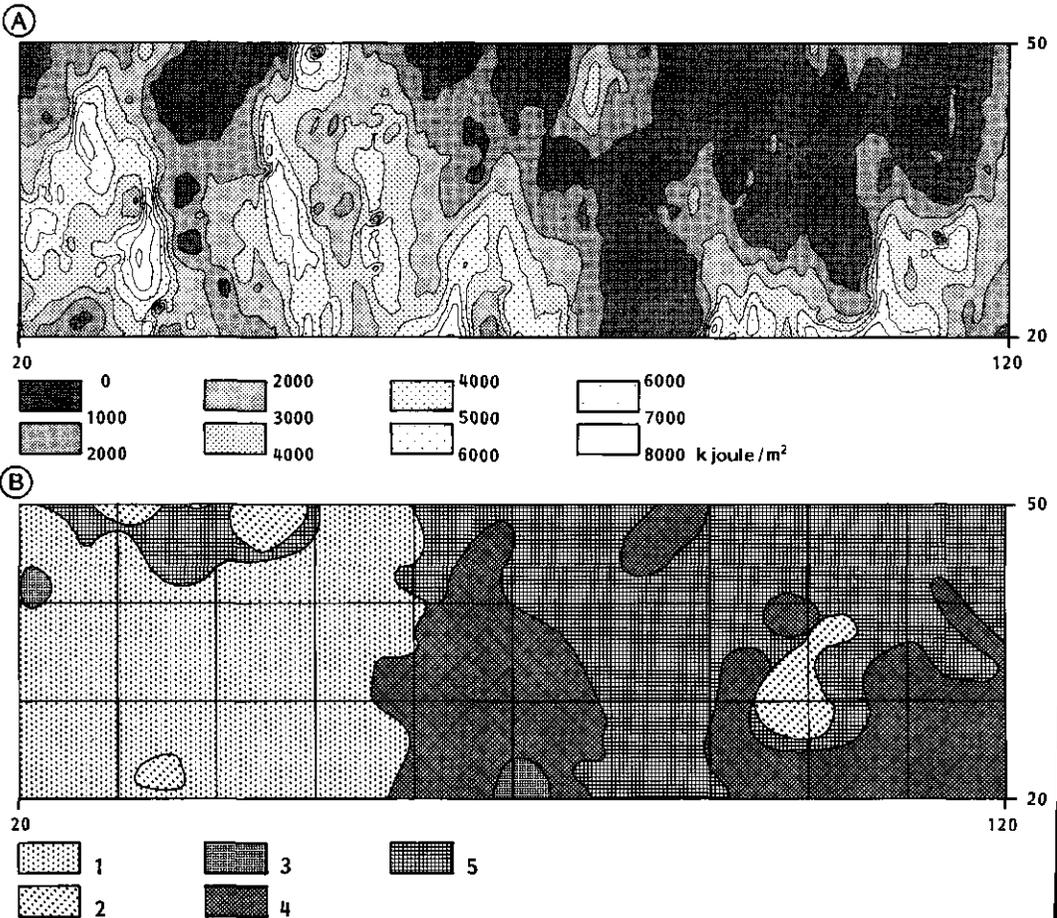


Fig. 11.5. Gradients of direct radiation as computed by the program FOREYE over the month of June at two perpendicular lines (A and B) in the transect area of Noordhout (The Netherlands). Where this gradient line intersects the line of linear extinction points of inversion can be found



integrated light just below the canopy of Terborgh (1985). In Figure 11.5 radiation gradients show the ecological inversion points (sensu Hallé et al. 1978) mentioned above. The smaller and the more interactive the eco-units, the more the inversions are hidden under complex shapes of curves caused by oblique radiation. The light patterns can be collated with herb species occurrence in the herbaceous transect and with growth of trees in the future. Collations of the light pattern of direct radiation in the month of June with the vegetation map of the core area of Noordhout (Fig. 11.6) shows the relation between areas with radiation values $< 1000 \text{ KJ/m}^2$ and the occurrence vegetation types 2 and 5. Both vegetation types are differentiated from the other types by the absence of *Deschampsia flexuosa*.

←

Fig. 11.6. A Contour lines of radiation values of direct radiation at ground level in the central 100 x 30 m block of the core area of Noordhout (The Netherlands) as computed by the program FOREYE over the month June. B Vegetation pattern of the same area. The legend units of the map are named after dominant and codominant species. 1=*Vaccinium myrtillus-Vaccinium vitis idaea-Deschampsia flexuosa* type, 2 nude forest floor, 3=*Vaccinium myrtillus-Vaccinium vitis idaea* type, 4=*Vaccinium myrtillus-Deschampsia flexuosa* type, 5=*Vaccinium myrtillus* type

Part D The Potential of SILVI-STAR

The Monitoring System as a Tool: Some Examples

In this Chapter we will look back and compare the developed system with its objectives (Chap. 1).

An operational method for description of forest dynamics is now available. The 58 forest objects (see Appendix) of the RIN forest ecological information system, of which some have been used in this book for demonstration, have been under study now for 9 years. Full reassessments of the oldest core areas will be made in 1990. The reassessments will provide data on mosaic shifts in the core areas such as could be worked out earlier for the core areas of Fontainebleau (Koop and Hilgen 1987) due to a link up with the work of Bouchon et al. (1973).

The method has been adopted and used for 2 years by workers of the state forest department in describing the initial state of ten forests incorporated in the Dutch forest reserve project (Bosch 1986). Collected data are stored in the ORACLE database system as described in this book. In this connection the method is part of a planned interdisciplinary research program in Dutch forest reserves that embodies collaboration of institutions, studying among other things soil and litter dynamics and natural regeneration and development processes.

With the development of cartoon film techniques and the possibility of plotting and image processing techniques related to geographical information systems, data on forest dynamics can be visually transmitted even to persons who are quite unfamiliar with the dynamic character of forest development.

The gap between the descriptive methods and the practice of forest management on the one hand and the forest modellers on the other can be bridged if modellers made use of the same data sets. Preferably, growing data sets of monitoring projects should be used, so that models and their results can be tested against observed forest dynamics. Monitoring and modelling should go hand in hand. Often, simplification of the data gathered in the information system presented is necessary before it can be used as input for a specific model. The same data set, however, could serve for other models which do include more information on local single tree forest structure and can produce images and figures which are closer to and more recognizable for the practical management people. Examples of the potential use of the system for different disciplines will be given below. Also the use for consultancy and extraction of data for other purposes than originally planned will be presented.

12.1 Forestry

Although time series are too short yet to draw gross conclusions concerning the questions put forward in the problem analyses in Chapter I, some preliminary results

can demonstrate the use for forestry practice. Conclusions about competition between trees can be drawn for different forest types. The monitoring of the spontaneous process of self-thinning indicates whether or not management is necessary to reach a certain goal. For example, in the *Melico-Fagetum* and the *Fago-Quercetum* in Fontainebleau, no other species than *Fagus sylvatica* plays a lasting role in a spontaneous forest development. This means that other species will not succeed unless they are continuously released from obtrusive beeches. It is swimming against the stream. At the same time it was found that within 1 ha core area a small-scale uneven-aged regeneration mosaic of beeches can exist. These findings indicate that a management system of beech with small-scale cuts and harvest of tree groups could run with minimal correction of the natural process and thus would be most cheap.

The core area in the *Tilio-Carpinetum* of Bialowieza, however, shows that at this site type a mixture of tree species can exist. A certain gap size is necessary for pioneer species such as *Quercus robur* or *Populus tremula* to regenerate.

For each forest type the critical gap sizes for different tree species to succeed can be found. Such knowledge can be used to stimulate natural regeneration of specific species. The duration of different phases in a developmental cycle on each site can be used for designing thinning systems. Forest management regimes on similar sites can mimic the scale and sequence of forest dynamical phases and with minimal corrections a mixture of tree species can be maintained (Brünig 1981).

A first step towards a predictive tree growth model has been made by the light simulation of FOREYE. Until now the light values have been used only in a correlative way with tree ring increment and reaction of herbaceous flora and tree regeneration.

For interpretation of remote sensing images, whether they be aerial photographs, scanning or radar images, the three-dimensional forest model is a useful tool to extrapolate the groundtruth data collected in the core area to the surrounding forest. The model could be used for canopy reflectance modelling according to, e.g. Li and Strahler (1985, 1986), Franklin and Strahler (1988), Goel and Grier (1988).

12.2 Fauna Habitat Studies

Forest structure plays an important role in the habitat selection of many forest animals. Measures like the number of tree species per unit area, cover and height of herbs, shrubs, and trees have proved to determine habitat selection. Foliage height diversity (MacArthur and MacArthur 1961), basal area and tree diameter distribution were important as well (Mühlenberg 1980; James and Warner 1982). Kneitz (1980) and Van der Plaats (1982) made preliminary studies of what species groups would be suitable for monitoring inside the core areas of forest reserves. The impact of forest structure upon species has been studied most frequently in birds (e.g. Karr and Roth 1971; Willson 1974; Blondel and Cuvillier 1977; Opdam and Van Bladeren 1981; Opdam and Schotman 1986) and small mammals (e.g. Olszewski 1968; Deuser and Kaufman 1978; Deuser and Shugart 1978, 1979; Jonge and Dienske 1979; Vickery 1981; Dankers 1983 and Piepers 1986). August (1983) and Van Vuure (1986) studied the effect of forest structure on other species groups.

Methods of forest structure description for fauna habitat description as mentioned by James and Shugart (1970), van Berkel (1979) and Mühlenberg (1980), can all be deduced from the SILVI-STAR digital forest model. In fact, the three-dimensional model of crown volumes distributed in space enables calculation of new variables for characterization of habitat complexity and heterogeneity.

knowledge about forest dynamics, such as duration of developmental phases, species composition of those phases, e.g. as described for the Neuenburger Urwald (Chap. 9) and the availability in time of specific microhabitats such as mound-and-pit micorelief, or dead wood that serves as a niche to special plant species.

The FOREYE radiation model can help specifying niches of forest plant species in regard to shade tolerance. Questions about what are the critical phases for establishment of species and limiting levels for maintenance in regard to shade tolerance can be solved in a number of cases.

Scope for Improvements and Further Development

The detail and precision of description of the monitoring system has been worked out in an iterative process of feedback between description and the level of explanation required for management purposes.

The system hierarchy for description was attuned to the scale of management and the practical questions that had to be answered. This hierarchy allowed causal explanation of pattern and processes at one hierarchical scale by pattern and processes at adjacent system levels. In this chapter improvements will be discussed that could result in better prediction. Adaptations of the tree model and the application programs, as steps towards the predictive model, are proposed. Further application programs to be developed are mentioned.

13.1 Restrictions of the System

Although in an early phase of development a preliminary study was carried out for the incorporation of the fauna in the monitoring system (Van der Plaat 1982), a complementary monitoring project on fauna was never started because of shortage of manpower. The department of Landscape Ecology of the Research Institute of Nature management carried out some breeding bird inventories in forest site areas under study with the monitoring system. These data have not yet been fully elaborated.

The abiotic component is missing in the monitoring system. Although incorporated in an earlier study (Koop 1981), no manpower was available for soil characterization in the present monitoring system until now.

In a multidisciplinary study project in strict forest reserves on the initiative of the State Forest Service (Bosch 1986) the University of Amsterdam and the Research Institute for Forestry "De Dorschkamp" will collaborate to enable incorporation of abiotic and fauna components in the information system.

Other research groups, attracted by a detailed multidisciplinary environmental description of a potential study site, participate in monitoring other forest components. For example, in all forest reserves fungi will be assessed during 3 successive years in the woody transect area (Veerkamp 1989). Similarly in some reserves mosses and lichens will be monitored. On the maps of the core area each tree can easily be retraced individually and the simulation of the light climate with the program FOREYE offers new possibilities for description of their habitats.

13.2 Prospects for Further Development

13.2.1 Data Collection

The reassessment of the set of forest objects under study will be continued. New forest reserves will be incorporated in the monitoring program as part of the Dutch forest reserve program. As time series of the permanent plots of the herbaceous transect area grow (now maximal 3 reassessments) and the full reassessments after 10 years of the core areas become available, these will offer new possibilities for description of forest dynamics.

Other data sets from abroad will be processed in the same way, such as those of repeated transect analyses in the montane rainforests of Java (Indonesia) by Smiet (1989).

13.2.2 Predictive Models

First of all the program FOREYE has to be validated with real radiation measurement in the field. Until now these labour-intensive measurements were beyond the scope of the monitoring project, which primarily focussed on continuation of reassessment of the forest objects under study. In the next few years first attempts at validation will be carried out.

As a continuation of the line set by the "cartoon film"-forest growth reconstruction by the program GROWRING, in future we will try to develop a predictive forest growth model that simulates single tree growth using the data of the monitoring system for calibration. The prediction should focus on relatively short time runs, over time periods that are relevant for management purposes. Its main use is in training courses for demonstration of the effects of decisions for silvicultural design. The program FOREYE provides simulation of the competition for light. However, for this use the program needs adaptation (see below).

Possibly routines for other competitive factors could be included such as the competition model of Faber (1983). This model was originally designed for mono-species and mono-layered stands and presumes a more or less closed canopy. It takes into account the individual dimensions of trees and their spatial arrangement, to compute competition factors and simulate individual tree growth. Competition is approximated by the growth space that is assigned to a tree. The total of growth space is divided in a grid. The pixels are assigned to individual trees according to their weight factor. The weight factor is the higher the shorter the distance of the tree to the pixel and the thicker the tree. In Faber's model the concept of horizontal growth space is intended to cover aboveground competition as well as root competition. However, it is evident that in uneven-aged vertically complex forest architecture its relevance for root competition is higher than for aboveground competition. Therefore for simulation of root competition, the model of Faber could be added complementarily to the FOREYE procedure, which takes into account the aboveground competition for light.

The risk of death or windthrow could be simulated in the three-dimensional forest model (see below). However, at this moment it seems premature to expect realistic predictions over long time periods, because of the stochastic character of tree death and

the damage caused by tree falls. These long-term predictions probably find a better solution in the JABOWA like gap models at the cost, however, of spatial relationships among individual trees and among regeneration units.

The program CANOPIX to compute the upper canopy surface still suffers from the fact that light intensities reflected from a rough canopy surface show large variation. This largely depends upon the provenance of light reflection, either from shaded, embedded deeper parts of the canopy surface or from higher exposed or sun-enlightened parts. Shading pattern should be simulated, so that for the training pixel samples shaded pixels of the same species can be separated from the unshaded ones. This extra information could be taken into account when interpreting training sets of reflection values of pixels in two or more colour bands.

A new application of the SILVI-STAR forest model is probably found in interpretation of radar scanning images. Because the radar waves of different wavelengths and polarization penetrate into the vegetation at different rates (e.g. Hoekman 1985, 1987), the three-dimensional forest model can help with the interpretation, especially of complex forest signatures on non-light images, in respect to species composition and structure.

13.3 Problems to Solve

For incorporation in a predictive tree growth model the present single-tree three-dimensional tree model needs some adaptation.

A first problem to be solved is that an iterative use of the radiation simulation procedure (the present FOREYE), such as would be needed in a predictive model, is rather time-consuming. The time needed for one point computation of FOREYE depends on the maximum tree height and the tree density. The higher the point for which radiation is computed, the more trees can be skipped for computation and the shorter is the computing time. The maximum computing time for one point now is 5 CPU min at a VAX 750 computer in the case of a 30-m-high forest with a tree number of 1000 per ha. The computer time could be reduced by increasing the size of the steps in which the tree crowns are scanned. In the present version of FOREYE the step size is one degree. Another option is simplification of the present complex crown section. For this specific purpose, future trials will be run to simplify the tree shapes of compound quarter ellipses and vertical crown curves to the surfaces of revolution. Sensitivity tests of the program FOREYE will have to be carried out with different step sizes for scanning and simplified tree shapes. If simplified tree shapes, such as surfaces of revolution, which need less computing time, result in comparable light values these will be more suited for iterative radiation simulation for prediction of forest growth.

A second problem to be solved if we want to keep open the opportunity of asymmetric crown development is the difficulty of altering the form of the horizontal crown section during tree growth. In the program GROWRING we let the compound of quarter ellipses shrink without altering its shape.

In the first-mentioned case, a change in shape of the horizontal section of the tree crown should depend on the radiative conditions at different parts of the tree crown. In this case, the relative differences in radiative conditions on the tree crown or, for example, in the four peripheral points, must determine which path the four peripheral points should follow to build a new compound of quarter ellipses. The surface area to which the new horizontal section can grow is, however, limited and determined by competitive factors. Probably a simplified tree model, as a surface of revolution, is the best solution to start with.

The distribution of risk of windthrow in a forest is an interesting phenomenon in regard of the frequencies and dimensions of disturbance.

The three-dimensional forest model could be used for modelling stability of individual trees against windthrow (Ford 1976; Kuiper and Van Schoten 1985; Kuiper in preparation). Not trying to simulate the very complex reality of turbulent wind flows, the risk factors could be determined for windthrow or stem break. Roughness of the canopy can be computed from the forest model and wind speed profiles could be simulated. Exposition of an individual tree embedded in the surrounding forest canopy architecture can be computed from the forest model. Together with the height/diameter ratio, the indications of the dimensions of the root systems per tree species obtained from uprootings and the dimensions of the tree, its crown and inner crown cover, a relative risk factor might be calculated.

Summary

A comprehensive monitoring system has been developed inclusive of a computer package for analysis of long-term forest dynamics observations. The system name **SILVI-STAR** is a composition of **SILVI**genesis and **Single-tree Three-dimensional AR**chitecture.

The Need to Develop SILVI-STAR

On a worldwide scale there is the need for expertise on how to incorporate natural processes in forest management systems. Whether we deal with man-made forests or with semi-natural or natural forests, to ensure forest preservation and lasting production capacity, natural processes must not be pushed into the background by economic or technical progress, but incorporated in forest management systems. Knowledge of the natural processes serves not only silviculture but also management in nature preservation. At the present natural forests are often exploited without any care for the durability of resources, and for short-term economic profit natural processes are ignored.

Often man-made forest are managed much like an agricultural crop, at a high cost of regeneration. Especially in man-made forests that have matured, spontaneous developments should be exploited, so that for forest maintenance less intensive human intervention is necessary. To understand the dynamic character of forest development and the role of natural processes, long-term observations are necessary. However, only few data sets on time series of permanent quadrat survey, repeated forest stand measurements or forest profile analyses exist.

Most existing predictive forest models relate to the growth of no other species than trees, whether in stands or in patches that are assumed to be homogeneous. Studies of relations between trees and non-arborescent forest compartments are mostly lacking. Simulations of complex forest architecture of natural forest is still beyond the reach of any forest model.

The way of starting with a simple model that can later be elaborated in more detail is rejected. Instead a descriptive model of the complex reality has been developed and time series of forest development at different sites were built up. On the basis of the data collected, applicative computer programs were developed to solve specific problems on the way towards a predictive model.

Development of SILVI-STAR

In developing the monitoring system three phases have been described: first, the working out of appropriate techniques for data collection in the field; second, the organization of data storage and retrieval; and third, data processing and interpretation. The system was worked out from already existing techniques for the analysis of structure and species composition of natural and semi-natural forests, viz. (1) remote sensing, (2) forest profile analysis, (3) methods of forest inventory used in natural forest reserves in Central Europe, (4) permanent quadrat survey in combination with vegetation mapping and (5) ground photography.

Processes in the forest take place at different scale levels in space and time. The hierarchy theory (Simon 1962), which is concerned with systems that have a certain type of hierarchically organized complexity, has been the basic concept in the system design. Because the first visible impact of most silvicultural treatment is structural, forest structure has been chosen as the prime criterium in delimitation of four hierarchal levels. These levels: the tree compartment, the regeneration unit, the non-woody compartment and the mosaic of regeneration units correspond to the scale levels that are most relevant for management purposes.

The Nested Plot Data Collection

Taking into account the advantage of standardized metric plots and the natural limits and minimum areas of the hierarchic units, a method of nested plot data collection on forest architecture and plant species composition has been worked out.

I The forest type area The forest type is an area of 10 to 40 ha around the core area (II). A forest history map is made at scale 1:2500. Earthworks are mapped and the age of the woodlands is mapped as reconstructed from old maps and written documents. The spatial patterns of vegetation composition and of vegetation structure according to developmental phases are recorded. The forest type area is mapped from large-scale aerial photographs (1:4000 to 1:8000) every 10 years. Aerial photographs in true colour, colour infrared, or both, are digitized by means of a video camera or scanner and image files are kept on tapes. Additionally, visual photo interpretations, such as vegetation maps and forest structure maps, are kept on shrink-proof tracing sheets.

II Core area A rectangular 70 x 140 m core area, ranging one tree height around the 10 x 100 m woody transect area (III) is measured at the same time intervals. Trees bases, crown projections, uprootings and dead trees on the forest floor are charted at scale 1:200 for trees with a Dbh more than 5 centimeters. Of these trees, diameter is measured at breast height (Dbh). Heights are measured for the crown top (HT), the greatest width of the crown or the periphery height (HP), the crown base (HC), the first living fork (HF), and the relative height of the tree base to a reference height (HB).

All trees are classified according to their species, architectural code according to Oldeman (1974a), vitality, and cause and intensity of damage according to Leibundgut (1959, 1982) and Mayer (1976). The cover of the crown within its projection is estimated for the individual trees with the decimal scale of Londo (1984).

The position and stage of decay of dead wood is recorded. For part of the core area, tree ring samples are collected for all trees with a Dbh exceeding 10 cm. At fixed and marked camera points, every 5 or 10 years depending on the rate of change of the particular forest vegetation, black and white photographs (negatives 60 x 60 mm) and colour-slides (24 x 36 mm) are taken.

The vegetation pattern is mapped at scale 1:200. The core area is used as a groundtruth reference for the forest type area. Information on forest structure and dynamics from the core area are used for explanation of changes in floristic composition in the central herbaceous transect area consisting of 50 adjacent 2 x 2 m permanent quadrats (IV), that are assessed every 3 to 5 years.

III The woody transect area The tree layer of a permanent transect measuring 10 x 100 m is characterized, in sufficient detail to describe tree shape, with profile drawings and crown projections at scale 1:200 at 10 year intervals.

VI The herbaceous transect area The herbaceous transect area, split up in adjacent 2 x 2 m quadrats, enables analysis of species composition within the map units of the 1:200 vegetation map of the core area.

Data are collected on field-forms or as hand drawn maps that are later digitized. The use of a hand-held computer in combination with a tree caliper and a hypsometer enabled direct data input into files in the field. To guarantee continuity in data storage and query, a commercially available database (ORACLE) and a geographical information system (ERDAS, ARC/INFO) have been used in the construction of the information system.

The Tree Model

A three-dimensional single-tree architecture model has been worked out to describe asymmetric tree shapes with a minimum of measured data points. The volume occupied by one tree at a certain moment in a certain forest stand is described by the co-ordinates of eight points, representing: tree base, place of first fork, top and base of the tree crown and the four extremities (peripheral points) of the crown circumference in positive and negative x- and y-direction. All z-co-ordinates are derived from height measurements while x- and y-co-ordinates are digitized from the hand-drawn plan. X- and y-co-ordinates of the top and base of the crown and of the fork, that are not drawn in projection, are computed separately. By making use of the ellipsoid nature of most deciduous trees, a best-fitting wrapping is constructed by connecting the four peripheral points of the crown circumference with a set of quarters of ellipses.

The crown curves of vertical transverse sections through the top and the base of the crown and the peripheral points are represented by an equation which is cognate to the formula of the quadratic equation of the ellipse but has a varying exponent E. With help of the hand-drawn transect profile, a best-fitting exponent is approximated, per species, for the upper crown part by measuring the crown radius at two different heights. The E-value for most broadleaved tree species is about 2.

To prevent distortion of bending trees, with their position of the tree base situated outside the crown projection, these crowns are digitized and processed in a rotated co-ordinate system. The new x-axis is stretched between the stem base and the most remote point of the crown, in relation to the stem base.

The position of fallen dead trees in the model is indicated as a straight or bifurcated line. Bifurcations of a higher order are omitted. The position of uprooting is indicated as a compound of quarter ellipses. The four extremities in x- and y-direction of the mound in horizontal projection are digitized in a rotated co-ordinate system, with the x-axis parallel to the midline of the trunk, similar to a bent tree.

Time Series

Time series of forest development at different sites are built up on the basis of the digital descriptive model of the complex reality of forest structure and species composition.

The collected data provide a detailed, yet comprehensive, database enabling descriptive and explanatory modelling at different scales for forestry, vegetation science and fauna habitat studies.

From the ORACLE database any type of data or combination of data types can be selected. By using the program ORACLEX, a complete standard format file for one

object can be retrieved from the database that fits all computer programs developed for data processing. The programs exist in VAX-FORTRAN for data processing and plotting on the computer (VAX and micro-VAX) and in BASIC for the Personal Computer (Olivetti). A visual interpretation of data is enabled by graphical system output such as profiles and ground plans of tree crown projections, providing substitutes for traditional profile drawings and maps. Crown area, crown cover, crown volume and basal area can be computed with the program ARBOSUM. These values are also computed separately for species and 10 x 10 m blocks of the core area.

Application Programs

In an application program (CANOPIX), for integration with remote sensing studies, an aerial view of the forest canopy is simulated on the basis of measured plot data. This view provides a groundtruth reference for the interpretation of remote sensing images. To explain the growth of individual trees and the distribution patterns of herbs and tree regeneration on the forest floor, another application (FOREYE) was developed, simulating the penetration of direct and of diffuse light. The three-dimensional forest model allows computation of the hemispherical cover for fixed points, inside the forest and above soil level, as an indication of the interception of diffuse light and changing oblique radiation. Cumulative cover values can be computed for the separate angles of the hemisphere from all crowns of trees within a certain radius. Light reflected by leaves, stems or branches is not taken into account.

The resulting values of such computation are processed with the subprogram FORFLUX in a way similar to a fish-eye lens- or hemispherical photograph (Anderson 1964; Ducrey 1975; Bonhomme 1976). The underlying radiation model is based on standard functions of direct and diffuse light under clear sky and standard overcast sky in J/m/s against sun height (de Wit et al. 1978). The distribution of diffuse light over brightness zones of the hemisphere is determined with the formulas of Ross (1981), distinguishing clear and standard overcast sky. Dependent on the hourly values, the chance of sunshine at any moment is determined. There is an option for random or fractionary determination of hourly sunshine duration. The amounts of direct and diffuse light can be computed over any specified period of the year. However, because the data on inner crown cover have reference to summer assessments in the period May-August, only computations in this period are reliable. The fish-eye computations for radiation assessment are made for the 50 adjacent relevés of the herbaceous transect area or in a grid in the ground plan or profile to derive horizontal and vertical light gradients as determined by the forest structure.

For the reconstruction of forest growth with tree ring data, a technique of animation was elaborated, facilitating a visual interpretation of the forest development.

The system is applied to demonstrate forest development in some European forest reserves using forest architecture descriptions and vegetation relevés, tree ring data and historical sources.

The Forest Reserve La Tillaie in Fontainebleau (France)

In the forest reserve of Fontainebleau (France) 600 years of forest development could be reconstructed for two core areas. Probably more or less even-aged stands

became established after a cut documented in 1372. They decayed after they had reached their physiological maximum age as described in a document in 1664. The present forest is an almost pure beech (*Fagus sylvatica*) stand. The oldest of the two present tree generations that can be recognized in the tree ring data dates from 1651-1693 and 1609-1723 in the two core areas, respectively. Then in both core areas until 1850 there is a regeneration gap. A second documented phase of decline of the almost pure beech forests started after 1850. From that moment on, trees of the second generation established themselves almost continuously until 1950. Until the present day in both plots part of the old generation survived and regeneration continued, which means that this second phase of decline is lasting for a longer time than the first one in the seventeenth century. The generation change has spread in time and in space. Nevertheless, the effects of the cuttings in the fourteenth century can still be seen in the present forest structure.

When looking at the pattern of canopy height of both core areas in Fontainebleau, it is striking that the lower trees are spatially separated from the big trees. They are arranged in circles around the big trees of a biostatic patch, showing a network woven between the highest trees.

The National Park of Bialowieza (Poland)

In the National Park of Bialowieza (Poland) forest structure could be traced back for more than a century. During the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, big *Picea abies* trees dominated a large part of the transect area. Some parts were dominated by *Carpinus betulus* and a big *Quercus robur*. Under the canopy of those broadleaved trees *P. abies* trees became established at the end of the eighteenth century. Some of those *P. abies* trees now have overgrown the *C. betulus* canopy. Around 1917, many big *P. abies* trees were uprooted. This event triggered the establishment of three groups of *Populus tremula* trees, of which one group together with an *Acer platanus* tree, can be found in the middle of the transect. During the natural thinning in *P. abies* during the late 1940's, in the first part of the transect a new generation of *P. abies* became established. Until 1984 a gradual decline of *P. abies* and *P. tremula* took place. The canopy gap formed by the death of an old *C. betulus* in 1943 was filled by a regeneration unit of mainly *Tilia cordata*. The young *T. cordata* trees at the margin of the opening show lateral crown growth in the direction of the light. The storms of 1984 and 1985 uprooted the remaining emergent *P. abies* trees.

The New Forest (England)

From historical data and comparison of the actual patterns of forest vegetation and recent developments in ten transects in the New Forest general conclusions about mosaic development in pasture woodlands have drawn. Development of a mosaic of forest phases depends on the coarseness of the mosaic with which grazing starts. If a fine-grained mosaic is the starting-point, long periods of "overgrazing" retaining generation changes will reduce age differentiation and result in fusion of formerly uneven-aged forest patches into open areas.

In general, grazing will retard spontaneous fragmentation of uneven-aged forest stands unless grazing pressure differs within a relatively short distance or fluctuates in

time. Differentiation in grazing pressure at a short distance can be induced by complexity of the environment. Complexity of the environment can be produced by obstructing lying dead trees and crown cages and scattered canopy gaps where establishment is triggered and growth of trees is faster than under a homogeneously closed canopy, with few slowly growing young trees. The chance of survival of at least some young trees in such complex environments is greater than in homogeneous environments.

Ile de Rhinau (France)

A pioneer *Alnus-Salix* forest on a sediment alluvial soil, historically documented in 1880, soon after establishment became invaded by *Quercus robur* and *Ulmus* spp. A second regeneration wave of *Q. robur* and *Ulmus* spp. and the first establishment of *Populus* spp. trees around 1880 indicate the starting collapse of the pioneer forest. In the 1930's and 1940's *Fraxinus excelsior* invaded the forest. Only a few older *F. excelsior* trees were found in the core area. At that time, the *Salix-Alnus* forest had probably collapsed, while in the meantime the river dynamics declined due to the construction of the Grand Canal d'Alsace. Although the forest structure suggests an uneven-aged structure, three distinct tree generations can be recognized from the tree ring analysis. Different tree species with their own growth rate and maximum life-span resulted in a complex forest structure. In comparison with the core areas of Fontainebleau, it is striking that due to more than one tree species and various but higher tree growth rates, generation changes take less time and the homogeneous regeneration unit of *Salix* and *Alnus* fragmented much quicker.

The Otterskooi (The Netherlands)

The forest dynamics of the Otterskooi have been reconstructed in another way, i.e. without using such tree ring data as were available for the forests dealt with in the previous paragraphs. The reconstruction has been based upon interpretation of historical data and present structural features such as spatial distribution patterns of tree species, patterns in architectural compartments and tree diameter distribution. Because of a serial succession process relation with ground vegetation has been stressed. The patterns in the vegetation map and in the forest structure map could be explained from forest history.

Tree species distribution has been worked out from digitized aerial photographs using the groundtruth of the core area. The first generation forest shows the highest amount of *Betula pubescens*. In the older forests their share decreases. The portion of *Alnus glutinosa* slightly decreases towards the oldest forest parts while the amount of *Quercus robur* and *Fraxinus excelsior* increases, gradually forming coherent patches. In the youngest forest parts only a few isolated small *F. excelsior* and *Q. robur* crowns were located.

In the core area, forest history and potential development has been analyzed using the present data of forest structure in relation to the vegetation pattern in the core area such as diameter distribution diagrams. The distribution patterns of all tree species are separately plotted for two different architectural compartments, i.e. the set of potential trees and the set of trees of the present. A third graph is made of reconstructed crown projections of the trees of the past.

The role of *A. glutinosa* and *B. pubescens* declines. Trees of the present of *A. glutinosa* still indicate the dominant role of the tree in the present situation. Potential trees of *A. glutinosa*, however, play a role of some importance only on the younger, thin peat soils of the ditches. *Q. robur* first established itself on the oldest peat soils, that first became dry. Later establishment of the species in vegetation types with younger soils took place, as these places had become dryer.

F. excelsior is the most frequent potential tree in all vegetation types. In its whole range of occurrence, *F. excelsior* has the highest proportion in potential trees. *F. excelsior* that was first present in the so-called *Impatiens* type later invaded the dryer types. On the youngest peat soils and the ditches and away from the open water the role of *F. excelsior* as a potential tree declines.

The forest development deduced from the present forest architecture and species composition has been collated with succession theories in literature. Together the patches of the Potential Natural Vegetation of *Carici elongatae-Alnetum*, *Pruno-Fraxinetum* and the *Lysimachio-Quercetum* form a fine-grained site mosaic which is highly determined by the pattern of ditches and "ribs" and the distance to flowing water. The hierarchy of the sylvatic mosaic as a subsystem of the site mosaic has been interchanged here. The forest architecture has different potentials at a short distance, which results in a heterogeneous and diverse forest structure and species composition. Because succession has not ended yet in a steady state, it seems likely that the patches of *Carici elongatae-Alnetum* will develop into a *Pruno-Fraxinetum* or a *Lysimachio-Quercetum* in the future.

Monitoring

Tens of years or even centuries of observation are necessary to detect forest dynamics as expressed by architecture and tree species composition (see Chap. 7). However, fast initial changes in structure and species composition can be exemplified in young, spontaneous willow stands in Zuidelijk Flevoland, a polder reclaimed in 1968 (The Netherlands). In 3 years the mortality of *Salix triandra* and *Salix alba x fragilis* was much higher than of *S. alba*.

To detect changes in the herb layer composition, long sequences of relevés of the 2 x 2 m herbaceous transect area quadrats would be needed. Because the Neuenburger Urwald was subject to an earlier study in 1978 and was included in the monitoring system later, data on the Neuenburger Urwald have been used for an interim analyses.

In conclusion, the clearest shift in species composition has been observed in dynamic gap eco-units that closed during the time period of the study. Differences in time can be best analyzed in sets of relevés where differences in abiotic site are slight.

Studies of Variables in Different Forest Types

Some variables have been compared in different forest core areas under study with the monitoring system. Relations between parameters by which surface and volume can be expressed and which can be easily measured have been studied by many authors. Such relations play an important role in prediction models for forest structure development. Some of these relations between tree measures will be analyzed.

It is remarkable that the C.C.I. (crown cover index) is about the same for all the core areas. It does not matter what the value are of C.A.I. (crown area index), crown volume or basal area, the C.C.I. is about 1. Only the core area of the Otterskooi, which is an open fen woodland that passed a recent phase of decay, has much lower figures for all variables.

Specific inner crown cover can clearly be distinguished in the set of the present. The trees of the present of *Fagus sylvatica* have the highest values of inner crown cover 9. *Fraxinus excelsior* and *Quercus robur* both have a lower crown cover value of 7. In the more or less shaded set of potential trees competition for light determines the inner crown cover. Shaded crowns develop an open mono-layered crown while crowns that have reached higher light levels develop multi-layered dense crowns.

Height/diameter ratios indicate structural ensembles. Several structural ensembles exist in the associations *Tilio-Carpinetum*, *Fraxino-Ulmetum* and *Pruno-Fraxinetum* but they spatially overlap. Whereas only one structural ensemble is fully developed in the *Fagus sylvatica*-dominated forests of the *Fago-Quercetum* and the *Melico-Fagetum*, lower structural ensembles, often referred to as shrub layers, here obviously do regenerate in canopy gaps but never reach maturity, since they are overgrown by *F. sylvatica*.

Light Simulation

Horizontal and vertical light patterns as simulated with the program FOREYE are discussed and a first relation with inversion surfaces and vegetation pattern has been demonstrated.

The potential of the SILVI-STAR system has been discussed for different disciplines and the scope for improvements and further development has been discussed.

References

- Aichinger, E., 1967. Pflanzen als forstliche Standortsanzeiger. Von Klagenfurt, Wien
- Akça, A., 1983. Aerophotogrammetrische Messung der Baumkrone. Allg Forst Z 30:772-773
- Akker, A., Groeneveld, W., 1984. Reconnaissance of Amazonian rainforest architecture and insect habitats. AUW Wageningen-Silviculture report 84/19
- Allen, T.F.H., Starr, T.B., 1982. Hierarchy: Perspectives for ecological complexity. University of Chicago Press, Chicago
- Alvey, N. et al., 1982. An introduction to Genstat. Academic Press, London
- Ammon, W., 1937. Das Plenterprinzip in der Schweizerischen Forstwirtschaft. Bern Leipzig
- Anderson, M.C., 1963. Light measurements in woodlands and other shaded sites. Ph. D. Thesis University of Cambridge
- Anderson, M.C., 1964. Studies of the woodland light climate. J Ecol I and II 52:27-41 and 643-663
- Anonymous, 1958. Study of tropical vegetation. Proc. Kandy Symp. 1956. UNESCO Paris
- Anonymous, 1985. Meerjarenplan Bosbouw Beleidsvoornemen Tweede Kamer vergaderjaar 1984-1985. Nr. 18.630:1-2
- Armson, K.A., Fessenden, R.J., 1973. Forest windthrows and their influence on soil morphology. Soil Science Soc. Amer. Proc. 37:781-783
- Attwill, P.M., 1962. Estimating branch dry weight and leaf area from measurements of branch girth in *Eucalyptus*. Forest Science 8:132-141
- Aubréville, A., 1965. Principes d'une systématique des formations végétales tropicales. *Adansonia* N.S. 5:153-196
- August, P.V., 1983. The role of habitat complexity and heterogeneity in structuring tropical mammal communities. Ecology 64(6):1495-1507
- Bachacou, J., Chessel, D., 1979. Étude des structures spatiales en forêt alluviale rhénane, III Dispersion interspécifique et analyse des correspondances. Oecologia Plantarum 14(3):371-388
- Baren, B. van, Hilgen, P., 1984. Structuur en dynamiek in la Tillaie een ongestoord beukenbos in het bosgebied van Fontainebleau. MSc Thesis AUW-Silviculture-RIN Leersum
- Barillon d'Amoncourt, 1664. Grand livre de réformation. Archives Forestières de Fontainebleau
- Barkman, J.J., 1968. Das synsystematische Problem der Mikrogesellschaften innerhalb der Biozönosen. In: Tüxen, R. (ed.) Ber. Int. Symp. Vegetationskunde Stolzenau/Weser 1964:21-53
- Barkman, J.J., 1970. Enige nieuwe aspecten inzake het probleem van synusiae en microgezelschappen. AUW Misc. Papers 5:85-116
- Barkman, J.J., 1973. Synusial approaches to classification. In: Whittaker(ed) Handbook of vegetation science. Junk, The Hague:437-491
- Barkman, J.J., 1977. Die Erforschung des Mikroklimas in der Vegetation, theoretische und methodische Aspekte. Mededelingen No 175 Biologisch station Wijster
- Barkman, J.J., 1979. The investigation of vegetation texture and structure In: Werger, J. (ed.) The study of vegetation. Junk, the Hague:125-160
- Bartelink, H.H., 1988. Gebruik van luchtfoto's bij metingen aan kronen in permanente proefplots. MSc thesis Vakgroep Landmeetkunde en Teledetectie, AUW-Silviculture Wageningen

- Dale, V.H., Doyle, T.W., Shugart, H.H., 1985. A comparison of tree growth models. *Ecol Model* 29:145-169
- Dam, D. van, Dobben, H.F., Ter Braak, C.J.F., Wit, T. de, 1986. Air pollution as a possible cause for the decline of some phanerogamic species in The Netherlands. *Vegetatio* 65:47-52
- Dankers, G., 1983. De invloed van bosstructuur op het voorkomen van muizen. *Huid & Haar* 2:128-133
- Davidson, S.E., Forman, R.T.T., 1982. Herb and shrub dynamics in a mature oak forest a thirty-year study. *Bull. Torrey Bot Club* 109(1):64-73
- Davis, T.A.W., Richards, P.W., 1933. The vegetation of Moraballi Creek, British Guiana: an ecological study of a limited area of tropical rain forest Part I. *J Ecol* 21:350-384
- Delcourt, H.R., Delcourt, P.A., Webb, T., 1983. Dynamic plant ecology: The spectrum of vegetation change in space and time. *Quart. Sci. Rev.* 1:153-175
- Derkman, G., Koop, H., 1977. Structuur en verjonging van een oerbos Puszcza Białowieza (Oost Polen). Praktijk verslag LH/Nb 1976-1977 projectnummer 70-71 Wageningen
- Deuser, M., Kaufman, D.W., 1978. Habitat distribution of *Peromyscus leucopus* within prairie woods. *Trans Kansas Aca Sci (USA)* 80(3/4):151-154
- Deuser, R.D., Shugart, H.H., 1978. Microhabitats in a forest-floor small-mammal fauna. *Ecology* 59(1):89-98
- Deuser, R.D., Shugart, H.H., 1979. Niche pattern in a forest-floor small-mammal fauna. *Ecology* 60(1):108-118
- Dierschke, H., 1978. Vegetationsentwicklung auf Kahlslägen verschiedener Laubwälder bei Göttingen I Dauerflächen-Untersuchungen 1971-1977. *Phytocoenosis* 7(1/4):29-42
- Dijkstra, K., Paasman, J., Pereboom, F., Postema, J., 1986. Uit de geschiedenis van de Brederwiede. Ysselacademie Kampen
- Dirkse, G.M., 1987. De natuur van het Nederlandse bos. Rijksinstituut voor Natuurbeheer RIN-rapport, 87/28
- Dirkse, G.M., Thalen, D.C.P., 1987. De natuurfunctie van het nederlandse bos, enkele resultaten van de Vierde Bosstatistiek. *Ned Bosb Tijd* 58(4):116-127
- Djawadi, K., 1977. Eine photogrammetrische Methode zu digitalen Erfassung und Charakterisierung der Oberflächengestalt von Waldbeständen. Dissertation Freiburg
- Dogniaux, R., 1975. Variations géographiques climatiques des expositions énergétiques solaires sur des surfaces réceptrices horizontales et verticales. *Inst Roy Mét Belg. Miscellanea Serie B* 38
- Doing-Kraft, H., 1954. L'analyse des carrés permanents. *Acta Bot Neerl* 3:421-424
- Drent, W., Oosterbaan, M., 1984. Bossen en Begrazing; Een onderzoek naar de invloed van begrazing op de bosstructuur en bosontwikkeling in het New Forest. MSc thesis Department of Plant Ecology University Groningen, RIN Leersum
- Ducrey, M., 1975. Utilisation des photographies hémisphérique pour le calcul de la perméabilité des couverts au rayonnements solaires I et II. *Ann Sci For* 32: 73-92 and 205-221
- Duvigneaud, P. (ed.), 1971. Productivity of forest ecosystems. *Proceedings UNESCO-IBP Brussels Symp* 27-31 oktober 1969
- Eber, W., 1972. On the light climate in forests near Göttingen and its influence on the ground flora. *Scripta Geobotanica* 3 Universität Göttingen
- Edelin, C., 1977. Images de l'architecture des Conifères. Thèse Université Languedoc Montpellier
- Edelin, C., 1984. L'architecture monopodiale: L'exemple de quelques arbres d'Asie tropicale. Thèse d'Etat USTL Montpellier

- Ellenberg, H., 1939. Über Zusammensetzung, Standort und Stoffproduktion bodenfeuchter Eichen- und Buchen-Mischwaldgesellschaften Nordwestdeutschlands. *Ebenda* 5:3-135
- Ellenberg, H., 1974. Zeigerwerte der Gefäßpflanzen Mitteleuropas. *Scripta Geobotanica IX Göttingen*
- Ellenberg, H., 1978. *Vegetation Mitteleuropas mit den Alpen in ökologischer Sicht*. Ulmer, Stuttgart
- Erteld von, W., 1979. über die Beziehungen zwischen Schaftdurchmesser und Kronenschirmfläche in Kiefernbestände. *Forstwiss Zbl* 98:270-277
- ERDAS, 1988. ERDAS-PC and PC Kit image processing user's guide version 7.3. ERDAS inc. Atlanta USA
- ESRI, 1987. ARC/INFO users guide version 4.0. Environmental Systems Research Institute California USA
- Escherich, G., 1927. *Im Urwald*. Georg Stilke, Berlin
- Evans, G.C., Coombe, D.E., 1959. Hemispherical and woodland photography and the light climate. *J Ecol* 47:103-113
- Faber, P.J., 1983. Concurrentie en groei van de bomen binnen een opstand. *Uitvoerig Verslag Band 18(1)*. Rijksinstituut voor onderzoek in de bos- en landschapsbouw 'De Dorschkamp' Wageningen
- Faille, A, Lemée, G., Pontailier, J.Y., 1984a. Dynamique de clarières d'une forêt inexploite (réserves biologiques Fontainebleau) I origine et état actuel des ouvertures. *Acta Oecologica/ Oecologia Generalis* 5(1):35-51
- Faille, A., Lemée, G., Pontailier, J.Y., 1984b. Dynamique des claires d'une forêt inexploite (réserves biologiques Fontainebleau) II Fermeture des clarières actuelles. *Acta Oecologica/Oecologia Generalis* 5(2):181-199
- Falinski, J.B., 1966. Plant communities of the international biological program study area in the Bialowieza National Park. *Materialy Zakladu Fitosocjologii Stosowanej U.W. Warszawa-Bialowieza* 14:1-23
- Falinski, J.B., 1976. Windwürfe als Faktor der Differenzierung und der Veränderung des Urwaldbiotopes im Licht der Forschungen auf Dauerflächen. *Phytocoenosis* 5(2):85-108
- Falinski, J.B., 1977. Research on vegetation and plant population dynamics conducted by the Bialowieza Geobotanical Station of the Warsaw University. *Phytocoenosis* 6(1/2):1-132
- Falinski, J.B., 1986. Vegetation dynamics in temperate lowland primeval forest. *Ecological studies in Bialowieza forest*. *Geobotany* 8. Junk, Dordrecht Boston Lancaster
- Falinski, J.B., 1988. Succession, regeneration and fluctuations in the Bialowieza Forest (NE Poland). *Vegetatio* 77:115-128
- Falinski, J.B., Olszewski, J.L., 1977. Die Verteilung der Schneedecke in Mischwäldern des Bialowieza-Urwaldes. In: Dierschke, H. (ed) *Vegetation und Klima*:163-182
- Faluere de la, 1716. *Grand livre de réformation de 1716*. Archives forestières Fontainebleau
- Fisher, J.B., 1984. Tree architecture: relationships between structure and function. In: White, R.A., Dickison, W.C. (eds.), *Contemporary problems in plant anatomy*. Academic Press, Orlando Fla.:541-589
- Flower, N., 1980. The management history and structure of enclosed woods in the New Forest, Hampshire. *J Biogeog* 7:311-328
- Ford, E.D., 1976. The canopy of a Scots pine forest: description of a surface of complex roughness. *Agr Met* 17:9-32
- Forman, R.T.T., Godron, M., 1981. Patches and structural components for landscape ecology. *Bioscience* 31:733-740

- Franklin, J., Strahler, A. L., 1988. Invertible canopy reflectance modeling of vegetation structure in semiarid woodland. *IEEE Transactions on geoscience and remote sensing* 26-6:809-825
- Fritts, H.C., 1976. *Tree rings and climate*. Academic Press, London
- Fröhlich, I., 1930. *Der Sudosteuropäische Urwald und seine Überführung in Wirtschaftswald*. Zibl Forstw
- Geerdes, B., 1985. *Ontwikkeling van de ondergroei in dennenbossen van de Sysseit bij Ede na 25 jaar*. MSc thesis RU Utrecht-RIN Leersum
- Géhu, J.M., 1973. Unités taxonomiques et le végétation potentielle naturelle du nord de la France. *Documents Phytosociologiques* 4:1-22
- Geiger, R., 1961. *Das Klima der bodennahen Luftschicht*. Vieweg Braunschweig
- Genssler, H., 1979. Naturwaldzellen in Nordrhein-Westfalen. *Natur und Landschaftskunde Westfalen* 15(4):97-106
- Glavac, V., 1972. Zur Planung von geobotanischen Dauerbeobachtungsflächen in Waldschutzgebieten. *Natur und Landschaft* 47(5):139-143
- Godron, M., 1971. *Essai sur une approche probabiliste de l'écologie des végétaux*. Thèse Montpellier C.N.R.S.No AO 2820
- Goel, N. S., Grier, T., 1988. Estimation of canopy parameters for inhomogeneous vegetation canopies from reflectance data: III. TRIM: A model for radiative transfer in heterogeneous three-dimensional canopies. *Remote Sensing of Environment* 25:255-293
- Graaf, N.R. de, 1986. *A silvicultural system for natural regeneration of tropical rain forest in Suriname*. AUW Wageningen
- Grand-Mesnil, M.N., 1982. A propos des réserves biologiques: questions d'histoire. *La Voix de la Forêt Bull. Assoc. Amis Forêt Fontainebleau* 182 (1)
- Greis, I., Kellomäki, S., 1981. Crown structure and stem growth of norway spruce undergrowth under varying shading. *Silva Fennica* 15(3):306-322
- Gruber, J., Voit, 1917. *Bialowies in deutscher Verwaltung*. Parey, Berlin
- Guillet, B., Robin, A.M., 1972. Interprétation et datation par le C¹⁴ d'horizons Bh de deux podzole humo-ferrugineux l'un forme sous callune, l'autre sous chenaie-hêtraie. *C.R. Acad. Sci.* (274):2859-2862
- Hallé, F., Oldeman, R.A.A., 1970. *Essai sur l'architecture et la dynamique de croissance des arbres tropicaux*. Masson and Co, Paris
- Hallé, F., Oldeman, R.A.A., Tomlinson, P.B., 1978. *Tropical trees and forests, an architectural analysis*. Springer, Berlin Heidelberg New York
- Hari, P., Kaipainen, L., Korpilahti, E., Mäkelä, A., Nilson, T., Oker-Blom, P., Ross, J., Salminen, R., 1985. *Structure, radiation and photosynthetic production in coniferous stands*. University of Helsinki Department of Silviculture Research Notes no:54
- Heil, G.W., Diemont, W.H., 1983. Raised nutrient levels change heathland into grassland. *Vegetatio* 53:113-120
- Henninger, J., 1983. *Zeitreihen der Bestandesentwicklung in naturnahen Waldbeständen aus Luftbilder*. Dissertation Universität Freiburg
- Henry, J.D., Swan, J.M.A., 1974. *Reconstructing forest history from live and dead plant material an approach to the study of forest succession in S-W New Hampshire*. *Ecology* 55(4):772-783
- Hermly, M., 1985. *Ecologie en fytosociologie van oude en jonge bossen in Binnen-Vlaanderen*. Thesis R.U.G. Gent
- Hermly, M., Stieperaere, H., 1981. *An indirect gradient analysis of the ecological relationship between ancient and recent riverine woodlands to the south of Bruges*. *Vegetatio* 44:43-49
- Hesmer, H., 1934. *Naturwaldzellen*. *Der Deutsche Forstwirt* 16(13/14)

- Hesmer, H., Schröder, F.G., 1963. Waldzusammensetzung und Waldbehandlung im Niedersächsischen Tiefland westlich der Weser und der Münsterischen Bucht bis Ende des 18 Jahrhunderts. *Forstarchiv* 34(7-8):177-208
- Hill, M.O., 1979a. DECORANA: a FORTRAN program for detrended correspondence analyses and reciprocal averaging. Ecology and Systematics Cornell University New York
- Hill, M.O., 1979b. TWINSPLAN- A FORTRAN computer program for arranging multivariate data in an ordered two-way table by classification of individuals and attributes. Ecology and Systematics Cornell University New York
- Hill, M.O., Gauch, H.G., 1980. Detrended correspondence analyses, an improved ordination technique. *Vegetatio* 42:47-58
- Hillgarter, F.W., 1971. Waldbauliche und ertragskundliche Untersuchungen im subalpinen Fichtenurwald Scatle/Brigels. Dissertation ETH Zürich
- Hillgarter, F.W., 1976. Beitrag zur Methodik der Erfassung und Beschreibung von Urwaldphasen. Proceedings IUFRO World-Congres Div.I Group I Oslo :79-83
- Hoekman, D.H., 1985. Radar backscattering of forest stands. *Intern. Journal Remote Sensing* 6(2):325-343
- Hoekman, D.H., 1987. Multiband scatterometer data analysis of forests. *Intern. Journal Remote Sensing* 8:1695-1707
- Honda, H., 1971. Description of the form of trees by the parameters of the tree-like body: effects of the branching angle and the branch length. *J Theor Biol* 31:331-338
- Hoogesteger, J., 1983. De natuurlijke wilgenbossen in Zuidelijk Flevoland. In: Groenhuis, B. (ed), 50 Jaar bosbouw en bosbouwkundig onderzoek in de IJselmeerpolders. Flevovericht 216 Ministerie Verkeer & Waterstaat-RIJP
- Horn, H.S., 1971. The adaptive geometry of trees. Princeton University Press
- Houllier, F., 1985. Inventaires successifs en forêt: intérêt théorique et limites pratiques de l'échantillonnage partiellement renouvelé. *Ann. Sci. For.* 42(3):245-264
- Houtzagers, G., 1954. Houtteelt der gematigde luchtstreek I. Tjeenk Willink Zwolle
- Husch, B., 1971. Planning a forest inventory. Forest resources division Forestry Dept. F.A.O. Rome
- Hutnik, J.R., 1952. Reproduction on windfalls in a northern hardwood stand. *J For* 50:693-694
- Ivessalo, Y., 1950. On the correlation between crown diameter and the stem of trees. *Comm. For. Fenica* 2(38):1-26
- Jacquot, C., Robin, A.M., Bedeneau, M., 1973. Réconstruction d'un ancien peuplement forestier en forêt de Fontainebleau par l'étude anatomique de charbons de bois et leur datation au C¹⁴. *Bulletin Soc. Bot. Fr.*:120
- Jahn, G., 1980. Diskussionsbeitrag zur Methode der Erfassung der Bodenvegetation auf Dauerbeobachtungsflächen in Naturwaldreservaten. *Natur und Landschaft* 55(4):149-150
- Jahn, G., 1982. Application of vegetation science to forestry. Handbook of vegetation science XII, Junk, The Hague Boston London
- James, F.C., Shugart, H.H., 1970. A quantitative method of habitat description. *Audubon Field Notes* 24(6):727-736
- James, F.C., Wamer, N.O., 1982. Relationship between temperate forest bird communities and vegetation structure. *Ecology* 63(1):159-171
- Jarvis, P.G., James, G.B., Landsberg, J.J., 1976. Coniferous forest. In: Monteith, J.L. (ed) *Vegetation and the atmosphere* Vol. II:171-240
- Jonge, G., Dienske, H., 1979. Habitat and interspecific displacement of small mammals in the Netherlands. *Netherlands J Zool* 29(2):177-214
- Jongman, R.H.G., Ter Braak, C.J.F., Tongeren, O.F.R. van, 1987. Data analysis in community and landscape ecology Pudoc Wageningen

- Kalkhoven, J.T.R. et al., 1976. Landelijke milieukartering een landschapsecologische kartering van het natuurlijk milieu in Nederland t.b.v. de ruimtelijke planning op nationaal niveau. Staatsuitgeverij Den Haag
- Kalkhoven, J.T.R., Van der Werf, S., 1988. Mapping the Potential Natural Vegetation. In: Küchler, A.W., I.S. Zonneveld, Vegetation mapping. Handbook of vegetation science Vol 10. Kluwer, Dordrecht:375-386
- Kam, M. de, Dam, B.C. van, 1987. Scheutsterfte en bastnecrose veroorzaakt door *Sphaeropsis sapinea* in Nederland. Ned Bosb Tijd 59(6), :215-219
- Karr, J.R., Freemark, K.E., 1983. Habitat selection and environmental gradients: dynamics in the stable tropics. Ecology 64(6):1481-1494
- Karr, J.R., Roth, R.R., 1971. Vegetation structure and avian diversity in several New World areas. Amer Nat 105:423-435
- Karvec, G., 1903. Belovezskaja Pusza. Petersburg
- Kätzler, W., 1984. Zur forstlichen Aufnahme der Bannwälder in Baden-Württemberg. Mitteilungen der Forstlichen Versuchs und Forschungs Anstalt Baden-Württemberg 108:123-130
- Kauppi, P., Hari, P., Kellomäki, S., 1978. A discrete time model for succession of ground cover communities after clear cutting. Oikos 30, :100-105
- Kenneweg, H., 1972. Die Verwendung von Farb und Infrarot Farb Luftbildern für Zwecke der Forstlichen Photo Interpretation unter besonderer Berücksichtigung der Erkennung und Abgrenzung von Kronenschäden in Fichtenbeständen. Dissertation Universität Freiburg
- Kenneweg, H., 1983. Möglichkeiten und Grenzen der Fernerkennung zur Inventur von Immissionsschäden. Allg Forst Z 30:761
- Klika, J., 1940. Die Pflanzengesellschaften des *Alnion*-Verbandes. Preslia Vestnik Ces. Botanické společnosti v Praze 28-29:16-31
- Knapp, R., 1974. Cyclic successions and ecosystem approaches in vegetation dynamics. Handbook of vegetation science Part VIII. Vegetation dynamics. Junk, The Hague:93-99
- Knapp, R., 1984. Sampling methods and taxon analyses in vegetation science. Junk, The Hague
- Kneitz, G., 1980. Möglichkeiten der Erfassung der Fauna in Naturwaldreservaten. Natur und Landschaft 55(4):156-158
- K.N.M.I., 1986. Frequentietabellen 1961/'80 Globale straling uurlijks. Publikationnr. 150-18; Frequentietabellen 1956/'80 Duur zonneshijn alle stations. Publikationnr. 150-19
- Knüchel, H., 1944. ber Bestandskarten und Bestandsprofile. Schweiz Z Forstw
- Koch, H., Gaisberg, E. von, 1938. Die standörtlichen und forstlichen Verhältnisse im Naturschutzgebiet Untereck. Veröffentlichung. Württembergischer Landesstelle Naturschutz 15:35-40
- Koeman, C., 1963. Handleiding voor de studie van topografische kaarten van Nederland 1750-1850. Wolters Groningen
- Koop, H., 1981. Vegetatiestructuur en dynamiek van twee natuurlijke bossen: het Neuenburger en Hasbrucher Urwald. Verslagen van landbouwkundige onderzoekingen 904 PUDOC Wageningen
- Koop, H., 1982. Waldverjüngung, Sukzessionsmosaik und kleinstandörtliche Differenzierung infolge spontaner Waldentwicklung. Berichte Internationales Symposium Struktur und Dynamik von Wäldern Rinteln :235-273
- Koop, H., 1984. Ecological monitoring of natural and semi-natural forests. In: Annual Report 1983 RIN Arnhem Leersum Texel:16-19
- Koop, H., 1986a. Omvormingsbeheer naar natuurlijk bos: een paradox ?. Ned Bosb Tijd 58(1/2):2-11

- Koop, H., 1986b. Ecological monitoring of natural and semi-natural forests. In: Fanta, J., 1986. Forest dynamics research in Western and Central Europe, Proc IUFRO Workshop SI.01_00 Ecosystems Wageningen:257-262
- Koop, H., 1987. Vegetative reproduction of trees in some natural forest in Europe. *Vegetatio* 72:103-110
- Koop, H., 1988. Ecological monitoring of natural and semi-natural forest. Annual Report RIN 1987 Arnhem Leersum Texel
- Koop, H., Hilgen, P., 1987. Forest dynamics and regeneration mosaic shifts in unexploited beech (*Fagus sylvatica*) stands at Fontainebleau (France). For *Ecol Man* 20:135-150
- Kopinga, J., 1979. De aanwasboor als hulpmiddel bij het opsporen van verborgen gebreken van loofbomen. Bericht 96 Rijksinstituut voor onderzoek in de Bos- en Landschapsbouw 'De Dorschkamp' Wageningen
- Korpel, S., 1974. Der Badiner Urwald. *Zbornik Vedeckych Prac* 27(16):7-37
- Korpel, S., 1982. Degree of equilibrium and dynamical changes of the forest on example of natural forests of Slovakia. *Acta facultatis forestalis* 24, :9-31
- Korpel, S., 1987. Dynamics of the structure and development of natural beech forests in Slovakia (summary in German and Russian). *Acta facultatis forestalis Zvolen-Czechoslovakia* 29:59-85
- Kort, L.P.F.A.M., 1989. Reconstructie van dynamiek in een beukenbos-jaarringanalyse in het bosreservaat van Fontainebleau (Fr). LUW Wageningen Silviculture-RIN
- Köstler, J.N., 1953. Bildliche Darstellung des Bestockungsgefüges. *Allg Forst Jagdz* 125:69-76
- Krause, A., Schröder, L., 1979. Vegetationskarte der Bundesrepublik Deutschland 1:200.000 Potentielle Natürliche Vegetation, Blatt CC 3118 Hamburg-West. Schriftenreihe für Vegetationskunde Bonn-Bad Godesberg 14
- Kuhl, W.F., 1984. Förster sehen den Wald Rot; Erfassung der Waldschäden durch Color-Infrarot Luftbilder. *LOLF Mitteilungen* 9(4):23-35
- Kuiper, L.C., Schoten, J.P. van, 1985. Dynamische aspecten van windworp (with Engl. Summ.). *Ned Bosb Tijd* 57(4):130-133
- Kuiper, L.C., 1989. Stability of Douglas fir against windthrow. draft
- Lacordaire, S., Lescuyer, C., 1953. Aménagement de 1853. *Archives Forestières Fontainebleau*
- Lamprecht, H., 1969. Zur Bedeutung von Naturwald-Schutzgebieten für Landschaftspflege aus Sicht von Forstwirtschaft und Forstwissenschaft. *Natur und Landschaft* 44(4):87
- Lamprecht, H., 1980. Zur Methodik waldkundlicher Untersuchungen in Naturwaldreservaten. *Natur und Landschaft* 55(4):146-147
- Leemans, R., 1986. Structure of the primaeval forest of Fiby. In: Fanta, J., Forest dynamics research in Western and Central Europe. Proc IUFRO Workshop SI-01-00 Ecosystems 1985:221-230
- Leibundgut, H., 1945. Waldbauliche Untersuchungen über den Aufbau von Plenterwälder. *Mitteilungen Schweizerische Anstalt forstliches Versuchswesen XXIV*(1)
- Leibundgut, H., 1959. Über Zweck und Methodik der Struktur- und Zuwachsanalyse von Urwäldern. *Schweiz Z Forstw* 110(3):111-124
- Leibundgut, H., 1966. Waldreservate. *Schweiz Z Forstw* 117(12):900-907
- Leibundgut, H., 1978a. *Die Waldpflege* 2 Aufl. Bern, Stuttgart
- Leibundgut, H., 1978b. Über die Dynamik europäischer Urwälder. *Allg Forst Z* 24:686-690
- Leibundgut, H., 1982. *Europäische Urwälder der Bergstufe*. Haupt, Bern Switzerland
- Lemée, G., 1966. Sur l'intérêt écologiques des réserves biologiques de la forêt de Fontainebleau. *Bull. Soc. Bot. Fr.* 113:305-323

- Ogawa, H., Yoda, K., Kira, T., Ogino, K., Shidei, T., Ratanawongse, D., Apasutaya, D., 1965. Comparative ecological study of three main types of forest vegetation in Thailand I and II. *Nature and life in South East Asia* 4:13-48 and 49-80
- Ohsawa, M., 1981. A basic unit in forest community dynamics: A case study in the subalpine forests of Japan. *Proc Symp Forest regeneration in Southeast Asia Bogor 1979 BIOTROP special publications No 13*:43-62
- Oker-Blom, P., 1986. Photosynthetic radiation regime and canopy structure in modeled forest stands. *Acta Forestalia Fennica* 197:1-44
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1972. L'architecture de la végétation ripicole forestière des fleuves et criques guyanais. *Adansonia (N.S.)* 12(2):253-265
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1974a. L'architecture de la forêt guyanaise. *Mémoires ORSTOM*. 73
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1974b. Écotopes des arbres et gradients écologiques verticaux en forêt guyanaise. *La Terre et la Vie* 28(4):487-520
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1978. Architecture and energy exchange of dicotyledonous trees in the forest. In: Tomlinson, P.B., Zimmerman, M.H. (ed.), *Tropical trees as living systems* Chapter 23. Cambridge University Press, London New York
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1979. Quelques aspects quantifiables de l'arborigenèse et de la sylvignèse. *Oecologia Plantarum* 14(3):1-24
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1980. Field guide for the research group, Scale-drawing and architectural analysis of vegetations. *Inst. of Ecology Padjadjaran Univ. Bandung Indonesia-Dep. of Silviculture Agricultural Univ. Wageningen Netherlands*
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1983. Tropical rain forest, architecture, sylvigenesis and diversity. In: Sutton, S.L., Whitmore, T.C., Chadwick, A.C., *Tropical rain forests: ecology and management*. Blackwell, Oxford:139-150
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1986. On the limits of forest ecosystems: do they have skins ?. *IUFRO Ljubljana Division* 6
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1989. *Elements of silvology*. Springer, Berlin Heidelberg New York Tokyo (in press)
- Oldeman, R.A.A., Schmidt, P., 1986. Silvicultural design an exercise for students. In: Fanta, J., *Forest dynamics and research in Western and Central Europe. Proceedings IUFRO workshop SI.01_00 Ecosystems 1985* :205-210
- Oliver, C.D., Stephens, E.P., 1977. Reconstruction of a mixed-species forest in Central New England. *Ecology* 58(3):562-572
- Olszewski, J.L., 1968. Role of uprooted trees in the movements of rodents in forest. *Oikos* 19:99-104
- Olszewski, J.L., 1976. Relation between the amount of rainfall reaching the forest floor and the amount over a mixed deciduous forest. *Phytocoenosis* 5(2):127-156
- Ondok, J.P., 1984. Simulation of stand geometry in photosynthetic models based on hemispherical photographs. *Phytosynthetica* 18:231-239
- Opdam, P., Bladeren, G.J. van, 1981. De broedvogelbevolking van beheerde en onbeheerde delen van het Forstamt Hasbruch (Oldenburgerland, BRD) relatie tot bosstructuur. *RIN Leersum report* 81/2
- Opdam, P., Schotman, A., 1986. Betekenis van structuur en beheer van bossen voor de vogelrijkdom. *Ned Bosb Tijd* 58(12):21-33
- ORACLE Corporation, 1987. *SQL*plus user's guide version 5.0*. ORACLE corporation California USA
- Paczoski, J., 1930. *Lasy Bialowieza - Die Waldtypen Bialowieza*. Monografie Naukowe 1:1-575

Passarpe H. 1968. Neue Vorschläge zur Systematic nordmitteleuropäischer

- Koop, H., 1986b. Ecological monitoring of natural and semi-natural forests. In: Fanta, J., 1986. Forest dynamics research in Western and Central Europe, Proc IUFRO Workshop SI.01_00 Ecosystems Wageningen:257-262
- Koop, H., 1987. Vegetative reproduction of trees in some natural forest in Europe. *Vegetatio* 72:103-110
- Koop, H., 1988. Ecological monitoring of natural and semi-natural forest. Annual Report RIN 1987 Arnhem Leersum Texel
- Koop, H., Hilgen, P., 1987. Forest dynamics and regeneration mosaic shifts in unexploited beech (*Fagus sylvatica*) stands at Fontainebleau (France). *For Ecol Man* 20:135-150
- Kopinga, J., 1979. De aanwasboor als hulpmiddel bij het opsporen van verborgen gebreken van loofbomen. Bericht 96 Rijksinstituut voor onderzoek in de Bos- en Landschapsbouw 'De Dorschkamp' Wageningen
- Korpel, S., 1974. Der Badiner Urwald. *Zbornik Vedeckych Prac* 27(16):7-37
- Korpel, S., 1982. Degree of equilibrium and dynamical changes of the forest on example of natural forests of Slovakia. *Acta facultatis forestalis* 24, :9-31
- Korpel, S., 1987. Dynamics of the structure and development of natural beech forests in Slovakia (summary in German and Russian). *Acta facultatis forestalis Zvolen-Czechoslovakia* 29:59-85
- Kort, L.P.F.A.M., 1989. Reconstructie van dynamiek in een beukenbos-jaarringanalyse in het bosreservaat van Fontainebleau (Fr). LUW Wageningen Silviculture-RIN
- Köstler, J.N., 1953. Bildliche Darstellung des Bestockungsgefüges. *Allg Forst Jagdz* 125:69-76
- Krause, A., Schröder, L., 1979. Vegetationskarte der Bundesrepublik Deutschland 1:200.000 Potentielle Natürliche Vegetation, Blatt CC 3118 Hamburg-West. Schriftenreihe für Vegetationskunde Bonn-Bad Godesberg 14
- Kuhl, W.F., 1984. Förster sehen den Wald Rot; Erfassung der Waldschäden durch Color-Infrarot Luftbilder. *LOLF Mitteilungen* 9(4):23-35
- Kuiper, L.C., Schoten, J.P. van, 1985. Dynamische aspecten van windworp (with Engl. Summ.). *Ned Bosb Tijd* 57(4):130-133
- Kuiper, L.C., 1989. Stability of Douglas fir against windthrow. draft
- Lacordaire, S., Lescuyer, C., 1953. Aménagement de 1853. Archives Forestières Fontainebleau
- Lamprecht, H., 1969. Zur Bedeutung von Naturwald-Schutzgebieten für Landschaftspflege aus Sicht von Forstwirtschaft und Forstwissenschaft. *Natur und Landschaft* 44(4):87
- Lamprecht, H., 1980. Zur Methodik waldkundlicher Untersuchungen in Naturwaldreservaten. *Natur und Landschaft* 55(4):146-147
- Leemans, R., 1986. Structure of the primaeval forest of Fiby. In: Fanta, J., Forest dynamics research in Western and Central Europe. Proc IUFRO Workshop SI-01-00 Ecosystems 1985:221-230
- Leibundgut, H., 1945. Waldbauliche Untersuchungen über den Aufbau von Plenterwälder. *Mitteilungen Schweizerische Anstalt forstliches Versuchswesen* XXIV(1)
- Leibundgut, H., 1959. Über Zweck und Methodik der Struktur- und Zuwachsanalyse von Urwäldern. *Schweiz Z Forstw* 110(3):111-124
- Leibundgut, H., 1966. Waldreservate. *Schweiz Z Forstw* 117(12):900-907
- Leibundgut, H., 1978a. Die Waldpflege 2 Aufl. Bern, Stuttgart
- Leibundgut, H., 1978b. Über die Dynamik europäischer Urwälder. *Allg Forst Z* 24:686-690
- Leibundgut, H., 1982. Europäische Urwälder der Bergstufe. Haupt, Bern Switzerland
- Lemée, G., 1966. Sur l'intérêt écologiques des réserves biologiques de la forêt de Fontainebleau. *Bull. Soc. Bot. Fr.* 113:305-323

- Lemée, G., 1978. La hêtraie naturelle de Fontainebleau. In: *Problemes d'écologie: Structure et fonctionnement des écosystèmes terrestres*. Masson, Paris:75-128
- Lemée, G., 1981. Contribution à l'histoire des landes de la forêt de Fontainebleau: d'après l'analyse pollinique des sols. *Bull. Soc. Bot. Fr.* 128 Lett. Bot. 3:189-200
- Lemée, G., Faille, A., Pontailier, J.Y., 1986. Dynamique de cicatrization des ouvertures dans des réserves biologiques de la forêt de Fontainebleau. In: Fanta, J., *Forest dynamics research in Western and Central Europe Proc IUFRO Workshop SI.01-00 Ecosystems 1985*:170-181
- Lescure, J.P., 1978. An architectural study of the vegetation's regeneration in French Guiana. *Vegetatio* 37(1):53-60
- Li, X., Strahler, A. L., 1985. Geometric-optical modeling of a conifer forest canopy. *IEEE Transactions on geoscience and remote sensing* GE-23-5:705-721
- Li, X., Strahler, A. L., 1986. Geometric-optical bidirectional reflectance modeling of a conifer forest model. *IEEE Transactions on geoscience and remote sensing* GE-24-6:906-919
- Linden van der, J.A., 1973. *Topografische en Militaire kaart van het Koninkrijk der Nederlanden*. Fibula-van Dishoeck Bussum
- Londo, G., 1971. *Patroon en proces in duinvalleivegetaties langs een gegraven meer in de Kennemerduinen*. Dissertatie Nijmegen Verhandelingen No 2 RIN, Leersum
- Londo, G., 1977. Bossen en natuurbeheer. *Ned Bosb Tijd* 49(7/8):219-228
- Londo, G., 1978. A method of studying vegetation dynamics in a two-dimensional microgradient. *Phytocoenosis* 7(1-4):165-176
- Londo, G., 1982. Kleinschalige natuurbouw proeftuin Scherpenzeel, Doel, milieu en methoden. RIN-rapport 82/15
- Londo, G., 1984. The decimal scale for relevés of permanent quadrats. In: Knapp, R., *Sampling methods and taxon analyses in vegetation science*. Junk, The Hague:46-370
- Loon, H. van, Mensink, A., Scheltinga, A., 1985. *Vegetatiekundig onderzoek in verschillende boscomplexen in het Gerendal*. MSc Thesis RIN Leersum-Department of Botany II Catholic University Nijmegen
- Lustgraaf, B., van de, 1984. Remote sensing methoden voor het beoordelen van de gezondheidstoestand van vegetaties. Pudoc Wageningen
- Lutz, H.J., 1940. Disturbance of forest soil resulting from uprooting of trees. *Yale University School of Forestry Bulletin*. No 45
- Lyford, W.H., Maclean, D.W., 1966. Mound and pit microrelief in relation to soil disturbance and tree distribution in New Brunswick. *Canada Harvard Forest Paper* 15
- Mabelis, A.A., 1977. Artenreichtum von Ameisen in einiger Waldtypen. *Ber. Int. Symp. Vegetation und Fauna Rinteln*:187-208
- MacArthur, R.H., MacArthur, J.W., 1961. On bird species diversity. *Ecology* 42:594-598
- Malmer, N., Lindgren, L., Persson, S., 1978. Vegetational succession in a south Swedish deciduous wood. *Vegetatio* 36(1):17-29
- Mansour, S., 1986. Nabootsing van boomkronen en toepassing daarvan bij simulatie van fish-eye foto's. MSc Thesis AUW-Silviculture-Infomatica-RIN Leersum
- Markgraf, F., Dengler, A., 1931. Aus den Südosteuropäischen Urwäldern. *Z Forst Jagdw* 63(1):1-32
- Martin, A.J., 1976. Suitability of the line intersect method for sampling hardwood logging residues. *USDA Forest Service Research Paper* NE 339
- Masumi, A., 1984. Interpretationsschlüssel zur Auswertung von Infrarot Farbluftbildern für die Waldschädeninventur. *Allg Forst Z* 27:687-689
- Maurer, H., Meier, E., Häfner, H., Frei, U., 1983. Automatisierte Baumarten-kartierung mit grossmasstäblichen Infra Rot Farbbildern. *Schweiz Z Forstw* 134(1):37-47

- Mauve, K., 1931. Über Bestandesaufbau, Zuwachsverhältnis und Verjüngung im Galizischen Karpaten-Urwald. Hannover
- Mayer, H., 1976. Waldbauliche Behandlung von Schutzwäldern. Proc XVI IUFRO World-Congress Oslo Group I:24-35
- Mayer, H., 1984. Waldbau auf soziologisch-öecologischer Grundlage. Fisher, Stuttgart
- Mayer, H., Neumann, M., 1981. Struktureller und entwicklungs-dynamischer Vergleich der Fichten-Tannen-Buchen Urwälder Rotwald/Niederstereich und Corkova Uvala. Zbl ges Forstw 98(1):1-29
- Mayer, H., Neumann, M., Schrepf, W., 1979. Der Urwald Rotwald in den Niederösterreichischen Kalkalpen. Jahrbuch Vereinigung zum Schutze der Bergwelt e.V. München 44:79-117
- Mayer-Wegelin, H., Muhring/Schulz-Bruggemann, 1952. Untersuchungen ber den Bestandesaufbau im kleinen Urwald des Rotwaldes. Zbl Forst Holz
- McMahon, T.A., Kronauer, R.E., 1976. Tree structures: deducing the principle of mechanical design. J Theor Biol 59:443-466
- Mitscherlich, G., 1971. Wald, Wachstum und Umwelt. 2 Band: Waldklima und Wasserhaushalt. J.D. Saurländer, Frankfurt/Main
- Mohren, G.M.J., 1987. Simulation of forest growth, applied to Douglas fir stands in the Netherlands. Thesis AUW Wageningen
- Moon, P., Spencer, D.C., 1942. Illumination from a non-uniform sky. Trans. Illum. Engng. Soc. New York 37:707-712
- Mozgawa, J., 1983. Photogrammetrische Nachweis von Veränderungen der Kronenformen in immissionsgeschädigten Fichtenbeständen. Allg Forst Z 30:774-776
- Mückenhausen, E., 1977a. Die Bodenkunde. DLG GmbH, Frankfurt/Main
- Mückenhausen, E., 1977b. Entstehung Eigenschaften und Systematik der Böden der Bundesrepublik Deutschland. DLG GmbH, Frankfurt/Main
- Mueller-Dombois, D., Ellenberg, H., 1974. Aims and methods of vegetation ecology. Wiley, New York
- Mühlenberg, M., 1980. Kann man mit Hilfe von Vegetationsstruktur-Messungen Veränderungen von Tiergemeinschaften bestimmen ? Ber. Int. Symp. Epharmonie Rinteln:309-327
- Nagano, M., 1978. Biological production in a warm temperate evergreen oak forest of Japan: Dynamics and stand development. In: Kira, T, Ono, Y., Hosokawa, T., I.B.P. Synthesis 18:21-32
- Naka, K., 1982. Community dynamics of evergreen broadleaf forest in south-western Japan I. Wind damaged trees and canopy gaps in an oak forest. Bot Mag Tokyo 95:385-399
- Nakashizuka, T., 1985. Diffused light conditions in canopy gaps in a beech (*Fagus crenata* Blume) forest. Oecologia 66:472-474
- Nakashizuka, T., Numata, M., 1982. Regeneration process of climax beech forests I. Structure of a beech forest with the undergrowth of Sasa. Japanese J Ecol 32:57-67
- Newbould, P.J., 1967. Methods for estimating the primary production of forests. IBP handbook nr. 2. Blackwell, Oxford
- Niemann, E., 1968. Gedanken zur Problematik von Totalreservaten in Wäldern. Archif Naturschutz und Landschaftsforschung 8(4):273-290
- Noirfalise, A., 1987. Vegetation map (1:3.000.000) of the Council of Europe member states. Nature and environmental series European committy for the conservation of nature and natural resources Strasbourg No 16
- O'Neil, R., DeAngelis, D.L., Waide, J.B., Allan, T.F.H., 1986. A hierarchical concept of ecosystems. Princeton University Press

- Ogawa, H., Yoda, K., Kira, T., Ogino, K., Shidei, T., Ratanawongse, D., Apasutaya, D., 1965. Comparative ecological study of three main types of forest vegetation in Thailand I and II. *Nature and life in South East Asia* 4:13-48 and 49-80
- Ohsawa, M., 1981. A basic unit in forest community dynamics: A case study in the subalpine forests of Japan. *Proc Symp Forest regeneration in Southeast Asia Bogor 1979 BIOTROP special publications No 13*:43-62
- Oker-Blom, P., 1986. Photosynthetic radiation regime and canopy structure in modeled forest stands. *Acta Forestalia Fennica* 197:1-44
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1972. L'architecture de la végétation ripicole forestière des fleuves et criques guyanais. *Adansonia (N.S.)* 12(2):253-265
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1974a. L'architecture de la forêt guyanaise. *Mémoires ORSTOM*. 73
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1974b. Écotopes des arbres et gradients écologiques verticaux en forêt guyanaise. *La Terre et la Vie* 28(4):487-520
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1978. Architecture and energy exchange of dicotyledonous trees in the forest. In: Tomlinson, P.B., Zimmerman, M.H. (ed.), *Tropical trees as living systems* Chapter 23. Cambridge University Press, London New York
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1979. Quelques aspects quantifiables de l'arborigenèse et de la sylvignèse. *Oecologia Plantarum* 14(3):1-24
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1980. Field guide for the research group, Scale-drawing and architectural analysis of vegetations. *Inst. of Ecology Padjadjaran Univ. Bandung Indonesia-Dep. of Silviculture Agricultural Univ. Wageningen Netherlands*
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1983. Tropical rain forest, architecture, sylvigenesis and diversity. In: Sutton, S.L., Whitmore, T.C., Chadwick, A.C., *Tropical rain forests: ecology and management*. Blackwell, Oxford:139-150
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1986. On the limits of forest ecosystems: do they have skins ?. *IUFRO Ljubljana Division* 6
- Oldeman, R.A.A., 1989. *Elements of silvology*. Springer, Berlin Heidelberg New York Tokyo (in press)
- Oldeman, R.A.A., Schmidt, P., 1986. Silvicultural design an exercise for students. In: Fanta, J., *Forest dynamics and research in Western and Central Europe. Proceedings IUFRO workshop SI.01_00 Ecosystems 1985* :205-210
- Oliver, C.D., Stephens, E.P., 1977. Reconstruction of a mixed-species forest in Central New England. *Ecology* 58(3):562-572
- Olszewski, J.L., 1968. Role of uprooted trees in the movements of rodents in forest. *Oikos* 19:99-104
- Olszewski, J.L., 1976. Relation between the amount of rainfall reaching the forest floor and the amount over a mixed deciduous forest. *Phytocoenosis* 5(2):127-156
- Ondok, J.P., 1984. Simulation of stand geometry in photosynthetic models based on hemispherical photographs. *Phytosynthetica* 18:231-239
- Opdam, P., Bladeren, G.J. van, 1981. De broedvogelbevolking van beheerde en onbeheerde delen van het Forstamt Hasbruch (Oldenburgerland, BRD) relatie tot bosstructuur. *RIN Leersum report* 81/2
- Opdam, P., Schotman, A., 1986. Betekenis van structuur en beheer van bossen voor de vogelrijkdom. *Ned Bosb Tijd* 58(12):21-33
- ORACLE Corporation, 1987. *SQL*plus user's guide version 5.0*. ORACLE corporation California USA
- Paczoski, J., 1930. *Lasy Bialowieza - Die Waldtypen Bialowieza. Monografie Naukowe* 1:1-575
- Passarge, H., 1968. Neue Vorschläge zur Systematic nordmitteleuropaischer Waldgesellschaften. *Feddes Repert* 77:75-103
- Persson, S., 1980. Succession in a south Swedish deciduous wood: a numerical approach. *Vegetatio* 43:103-122

- Peterken G.F., Tubbs, C.R., 1965. Woodland regeneration in the New Forest, Hampshire since 1650. *App Ecol* 2 (1):59-170
- Peterken, G.F., 1974. A method for assessing woodland flora for conservation using indicator species. *Biol Cons* 6 (4):239-241
- Peterken, G.F., 1981. Woodland conservation and management. Chapman & Hall, London New York
- Peterken, G.F., Backmeroff, C., 1988. Long-term monitoring in unmanaged woodland nature reserves. Research & survey in nature conservation. Nature Conservancy Council No. 9
- Peterken, G.F., Jones, E.W., 1987. Forty years of change in Lady Park Wood: The old growth stands. *J Ecol* 75:477-512
- Piepers, A., 1986. De habitatvoorkeur van kleine zoogdieren (met name muizen). MSc thesis AUW Wageningen VPO-RIN Leersum
- Piotrowska, H., 1978. Zu methodischen Problemen der Sukzessionsuntersuchungen auf Dauerflächen. *Phytocoenosis* 7(1/4):177-189
- Plaat, G.J. van der, 1984. Faunistische inbreng in het boscologisch onderzoek; een voorstudie. RIN Arnhem report 84/5
- Pontailleur, J. Y., 1979. La régénération du Hêtre en forêt de Fontainebleau, ses relations avec les conditions hydriques stationnelles. Thèse Université de Paris-sud centre Orsay
- Pott, R., 1981. Der Einfluss der Niederholzwirtschaft auf die Physiognomie und die floristisch-soziologische Struktur von Kalkbuchenwälder. *Tuexenia* (1):233-242
- Prince, S.D., 1987. Measurement of canopy interception of solar radiation by stands of trees in sparsely wooded savanna. *Int J Remote Sensing* 8(12):1747-1766
- Proctor, M.C.F., 1980. Estimates from hemispherical photographs of radiation climates of some bryophyte habitats in the British Isles. *J Bryol* 11:351-366
- Prusa, E., 1985. Vegetace CSSR A15, Die Böhmischen und Mährischen Urwälder - Ihre Struktur und ökologie. Academia Praha
- Putz, F.E., 1983. Treefall pits and mounds, buried seeds and the importance of soil disturbance to pioneer trees on Barro Colorado Island Panama. *Ecology* 64:1069-1074
- Rackham, O., 1976. Trees and woodland in the British landscape. Dent & Sons Ltd, London
- Rackham, O., 1980. Ancient woodlands their plants life history and use. Arnolds, London
- Rauner, J.L., 1976. Deciduous forests. In: Monteith, J.L. (ed), *Vegetation and the atmosphere, Case studies Vol II*:241-264
- Reffye, P. de, 1979. Modélisation de l'architecture des arbres par des processus stochastiques. Simulation spatiales des modèles tropicaux sous l'effet de la pesanteur. Application au *Coffea robusta*. Thèse Université de Paris-sud centre d'Orsay
- Reffye, P. de, Edelin, C., 1989. La modélisation de la croissance des plantes. *La Recherche* 207:158-168
- Rhody, B., 1983. Erfassung mitteleuropäischer Hauptbaumarten im Rahmen von Waldinventuren mit Hilfe kleinformatiger Luftaufnahmen. *Schweiz Z Forstw* 134(1):17-36
- Richards, P.W., 1952. *The tropical rain forest*. Cambridge University Press
- Richards, P.W., 1983. The three-dimensional structure of tropical rain forest. In: Sutton, S.L., Whitmore, T.C., Chadwick, A.C., *Tropical rain forests: Ecology and management*. Blackwell, Oxford:3-10
- Rijken, M., 1976. Comparison of three maps of a natural forest vegetation obtained by different methods. *Phytocoenosis* 5(2):109-126

- Rollet, B., 1974. L'architecture des forêts denses humides sempervirentes de plaine. Nogent-sur-Marne CTFT
- Roloff, A., 1985. Morphologie der Kronenentwicklung von *Fagus sylvatica* L. (Rotbuche) unter besonderer Berücksichtigung möglicherweise neuartiger Veränderungen. Dissertation Universität Göttingen
- Rook, D.A., Grace, J.C., Beets, P.N., Whitehead, D., Santantonio, D., Madgwick, H.A.I., 1985. Forest design: biological models and management implications, In: Cannel, J.F. et al. Attributes of trees as crop plants. IUFRO conference Edinburg 1985
- Ross, J., 1981. The radiation regime and architecture of plant stands. Junk, The Hague
- Rozendaal, J., Slootweg, R., 1982. Onderzoek naar veranderingen in Zuidlimburgse hellingbossen en mogelijkheden van principale componentenanalyse bij beschrijving. MSc Thesis RIN-Department of Ecology University of Leiden
- Satterlund, D.R., 1983. Forest shadows: How much shelter in a shelterwood ?. For Ecol Man 5:27-37
- Scamoni, A., 1953. Naturwaldzellen. Natur und Heimat 6:176
- Schauer, W., Stöcker, G., 1976. Bestockungsanalysen und Dauerbeobachtungsflächen in Naturschutzgebieten naturnaher Berg- und Fichtenwälder. Beitr Forstwirt 10(3):147-153
- Schmidt, W., 1988. Langjährige Veränderungen der Krautschicht eines Kalkbuchenwaldes (Dauerflächenuntersuchungen). Tuexenia 8:327-338
- Schneider, T., Bresser, A.H.M., 1988. Dutch priority programme on acidification. Evaluation report 00-06 National Institute of Public Health and Environmental Protection Bilthoven
- Schowengerdt, R.A., 1983. Techniques for image processing and classification in remote sensing. Academic Press, New York
- Schulzing, R., Staaveren, C., van, 1981. Inventarisatie methoden voor bosreservaten. Thesis HBCS Velp-RIN Leersum
- Schulz, J.P., 1960. The vegetation of Suriname Vol.II Ecological studies on rain forest in nothern Suriname. Verhandelingen Koninklijke Nederlandse Akademie Wetenschappen afdeling Natuurkunde 253(1):1-267
- Schutz, P., Tol, G. van, 1989. Vitaliteit van het Nederlandse bos. Ned Bosb Tijd 61(2):50-51
- Shugart, H.H., 1984. A theory of forest dynamics, The implications of forest succession models. Springer, New York Berlin Heidelberg Tokyo
- Sillevis, J., Kraan, H., 1986. De school van Barbizon Franse meesters van de 19e eeuw. Haags gemeentemuseum
- Simon, H.A., 1962. The architecture of complexity. Proc Am Philos Soc (106):467-482
- Smiet, A.C., 1989. Human impact on mountain forest in the river Konto area: Vegetation and transect studies. Konto River Project, Project communications No. 11 Malang
- Smittenberg, J.H., 1969. Type-inventarisatie van broekbossen in het plassengebied ten oosten van de Utrechtse Vecht. RIVON-rapport Zeist
- Smittenberg, J.H., 1976. De vegetatie van het moerasboscomplex "De Suikerpot" te Kortenhoeve. In: Bakker P.A. et al. (ed). De Noordelijke Vechtplassen: 181- 195. Sticht. Cie. Vecht en Oost. en West. Plassengebied Vlaardingen
- Sollins, P., 1982. Input and decay of coarse woody debris in coniferous stands in Western Oregon and Washington. Can J For Res 12:18-28
- Spellmann, H., von, 1984. Zustandserfassung in Kiefernbeständen mit Hilfe des Luftbildes. Dissertation Universität Göttingen
- Spellmann, H., von, 1986. Dendrometrische Luftbilddauswertung in Kiefernbeständen für Zwecke der Forsteinrichtung. Forstarchiv 57:20-24
- Stephens, E.P., 1956. The uprooting of trees, a forest process. Soil science Proc. 20:113-116
- Stichting voor Bodemkartering, 1965. De Bodem van Nederland. Wageningen

- Stocki, J., 1981. Preliminary study on insect life-spaces in Oostereng forest. A UW-Silviculture Wageningen Stone, E.L., 1975. Windthrow influence on spatial heterogeneity in a forest soil. *Mitteilungen der Schweizerischen Anstalt für forstliches Versuchswesen* 51:77-87
- Sykes, J.M., Horrill, A.D., Mountford, M.D., 1983. Use of visual cover assessments as quantitative estimators of some British woodland taxa. *J Ecol* 71:437-450
- Tendron, G., 1983. La forêt de Fontainebleau, de écologie à la sylviculture. Office Nationales des Forêts Fontainebleau
- Ter Braak, C.J.F., 1986. Canonical correspondence analyses: a new eigenvector technique for multivariate direct gradient analyses. *Ecology* 67(5), :1167-1179
- Ter Braak, C.J.F., 1987. CANOCO a FORTRAN program for canonical community ordination by [partial][detrended][canonical] correspondence analyses, principal components analyses and redundancy analyses (version 2.1). TNO Institute of applied computer science Wageningen
- Ter Braak, C.J.F., N.J.M. Gremmen, 1987. Ecological amplitudes of plant species and the internal consistency of Ellenberg's indicator values for moisture. *Vegetatio* 69:79-87
- Terborgh, J., 1985. The vertical component of plant species diversity in temperate and tropical forests. *Amer Nat* 126 (6):760-776
- Thalen, D.C.P., 1980. On photographic techniques in permanent plot studies, *Vegetation Dynamics*. Proc Second Symposium Working group Succession Research on permanent plots Ierseke 1975 Junk:19-24
- Thijsse, J.P., 1939. Een nieuw natuurmonument. *De Levende Natuur* 8:225-230
- Thom, A.S., Stewart, J.B., Oliver, H.R., et al., 1975. Comparison of aerodynamic and energy budget estimates of fluxes over a pine forest. *Quart J Roy Met Soc* 101:93-105
- Tongeren, O. van, 1984. Concurentie en groei van bomen binnen een opstand, een bosbouwmodel beschouwd vanuit natuurbeheer. *Vakblad voor biologen* 64(8), :146-147
- Tonne, F., 1954. *Besser Bauen mit Besonnungs und Tageslicht Planung*. Karl Hoffmann, Schondorf
- Torquebiau, E.F., 1985. The tropical rain forest mosaic pattern with special reference to Indonesia. BIOTROP Bogor
- Torquebiau, E.F., 1986. Tropical rain forest regeneration patterns as recognized by laying down forest mosaic maps. Proc Symp Forest regeneration in Southeast Asia Bogor 1984 BIOTROP special publications No 25:139-150
- Trautmann, W., 1969. Zur Einrichtung von Naturwaldreservaten in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland. *Natur und Landschaft* 44(4):88-89
- Trautmann, W., 1972. Potentielle natürliche Vegetation. In: *Deutscher Planungsatlas Band I*. Janecke, Hannover
- Tubbs, C.R., 1986. *The New Forest. The new naturalist*. Collins, London
- Tüxen, R., 1956. *Die Pflanzengesellschaften Nordwestdeutschlands*. Gartenbauamt Bremen
- Urban, D.L., O'Neil, R.V., Shugart, H.H., 1987. Landscape ecology, A hierarchical perspective can help scientists understand spatial patterns. *Bioscience* 37(2):119-127
- Vandeursen, J., Wisse, J., 1985. De invloed van fluviale dynamiek op de groei en structuur van een natuurlijk *Fraxino-Ulmetum* in de Elzas. MSc Thesis RIN Leersum, AUW-Silviculture Wageningen
- Veen, A.W.L., 1984. Onderschepping en verdeling van hemelwater in bossen. *Ned Bosb Tijd* 56(11):270-279
- Veerkamp, Onderzoeks project paddestoeleninventarisatie (in prep)

- Veldkamp, R., 1985. Broedvogels in de Wieden. Rapport Vereniging tot Behoud van Natuurmonumenten in Nederland
- Vickery, W.L., 1981. Habitat use by Northeastern forest rodents. *Amer Midland Nat* 106(1):111-118
- Vlieger, J., 1937. Plantensociologische aantekeningen in de omgeving van Blokzijl. *Nederlands Kruidkundig Archief* 47:374-388
- Vooren, A.P., Offermans, D.M.J., 1985. An ultra-light aircraft for low-cost, large-scale stereoscopic aerial photographs. *Biotropica* 17:84-88
- Vuure, T. van, 1985. Zoogdieren, bossen en wederzijdse invloeden. PUDOC Wageningen
- Vyskot, M. a kolektiv, 1981. *Ceskoslovenske Pralesy*. Academia Praha
- Walter, J.M.N., 1979. Étude de structures spatiales en forêt alluviale rhénane, I Problemes structureaux et données experimentales. *Oecologia Plantarum* 14(3):345-359
- Watt, A.S., 1923. On the ecology of British beech woods with special reference to their regeneration, Failure of regeneration Part I. *J Ecol* 11(1):1-48
- Watt, A.S., 1947. Pattern and process in the plant community. *J Ecol* 35:1-22
- Werf, S. van der, 1989. De bostypen van Nederland. PUDOC Wageningen (in press)
- Werger, M.J.A., Zukrigl, K., Kley van der, A., 1984. Struktur einiger Laubwälder im Niederösterreichischen Weinviertel. *Flora* 175:31-44
- West, D.C., Shugart, H.H., Botkin, D., 1981. Forest succession: concepts and application. Springer, New York Heidelberg Berlin Tokyo
- Westhoff, V., Bakker, P.A., Leeuwen, C.G., Voo, E.E. van der, 1971. Wilde Planten, Flora en vegetatie van onze natuurgebieden deel 2: het lage land. Vereniging tot behoud van natuurmonumenten
- Westhoff, V., Held, A.J. den, 1969. Plantengemeenschappen in Nederland. Thieme & Cie, Zutphen
- Whitmore, T.C., 1975. Tropical rain forests of the Far East. Clarendon Press Oxford
- Wiegiers, J., 1985. Succession in fen woodland ecosystems in the Dutch Haf district, with special reference to *Betula pubescens* Ehr.. Dissertation University Amsterdam
- Wieren, S.E. van, Borghesius, J.J., 1988. Evaluatie van bosbegrazingsobjecten in Nederland. RIN Arnhem report 88/63
- Wieren, S.E., Koop, H., Beije, H.M., Thalen, D.C.P., 1989. Willson, M.F., 1974. Avian community organisation and habitat structure. *Ecology* 55:1017-1029
- Wilmanns, O., 1977. On forest reserves in the German Federal Republic. *Nat Can* 104:175-180
- Winckel, R. van de, 1980. Het Wyhlerwald, architectuur van een Rijnsoeverbos. MSc Thesis AUW-Silviculture Wageningen
- Winckel, R. van de, 1984. L'architecture et la dynamique d'une forêt alluviale rhénane sauvage. Colloques Phytosociologiques La végétation des forêts alluviales. Cramer, Vaduz 9:503-543
- Wirdum, G. van, 1979. Dynamic aspects of trophic gradients in a mire complex. Committee for Hydrological Research TNO: The relation between water quantity and water quality in studies of surface waters; *Proc and Information* 25:66-82
- Wirdum, G. van, 1987. The role of spatial variety in the application of ecology to nature protection and agriculture. Annual report RIN 1986:31-33
- Wit, C.T. de et al., 1978. Simulation of assimilation, respiration and transpiration of crops. Simulation Monographs PUDOC Wageningen
- Wit, Toke, 1982. Permanent plots, cryptogamic plant species and air pollution. In: Steubing, L., Jager, H.J., (eds) Monitoring of air pollutants by plants. Junk, The Hague: 53-58

- Wloczewski, T., 1972. Dynamika rozwoju drzewostanow w oddziale 319 Bialowieskiego Parku Narodowego. *Folia Forestalia* A.20
- Wolf, G., 1980. Zur vegetationskundlichen Bestandese Erfassung in den Naturwaldreservaten. *Natur und Landschaft* 55(4):148-149
- Yoda, K., 1974. Three dimensional distribution of light intensity in a tropical forest of West Malaysia. *Jap J Ecol* 24:247-254
- Yoneda, T., 1975. Studies on the rate of decay of wood litter on the forest floor I and II. *Jap J For* 25(1):40-46 and 25(3):132-140
- Zeide, B., 1981. Method of mound dating. *For Sci* 27(1):39-41
- Zimmermann, H.M., Brown, C.L., 1971. *Trees, Structure and function*. Springer, Berlin Heidelberg New York
- Zinderen-Bakker, E.M. van, 1942. Successie-onderzoek in het Naardermeer I en II. *De Levende natuur* 47(1):1-7 and 47(2):25-29
- Zukrigl, K., 1970. Zusammenhänge zwischen Standort, Vegetation und Bestandesstruktur in Urwaldbeständen verschiedener Ausbildungen des *Abieto-Fagetum*. *Posebna-izdanja XV*(4):47-59
- Zukrigl, K., 1973. Montane und subalpine Waldgesellschaften am Alpenostrand. *Mitteilungen der forstlichen Bundes Versuchsanstalt* 101
- Zukrigl, K., 1978. Der Rothwald als Forschungsobjekt. *Allg Forst Z* 24:700-702
- Zukrigl, K., 1983. Naturwaldreservate in Österreich. *Oeko* 5(2):20-27
- Zukrigl, K., Eckhart, G., Nather, J., 1963. Standortkundliche und waldbauliche Untersuchungen in Urwaldresten der Niederösterreichischen Kalkalpen. *Mitteilungen der forstlichen Bundes Versuchsanstalt Mariabrunn* 62 Wien

Appendix

Manpower

One scientific worker with assistant
Fieldwork and program development

Assistance

Photography department
For sequential ground photography

Reproduction

Blueprint machine for tracing sheet reproduction

System operator

Equipment

Field station:

Hand-held computer HUSKY-HUNTER (model: 352 K)
PC Computer ATARI-1040ST
Printer STAR NX-1000
Modem for a communication with the VAX-host computer

DEC VAX-750 computer
Plotter HP and CALCOMP

PC OLIVETTI-M 280 with A3-Plotter HP-7475A and Printer MANNUSMANN Tally 88

IBM compatible diskdrive for 5 inch floppy disks (for data exchange from ATARI, 3 1/2 inch micro floppy disks to OLIVETTI)

Core Area Tree Classification

Qualitative Characteristics of Live Trees

a Species

Tree species are coded according to a numerical index of the "Naturwaldreservate" program in the BRD (Lamprecht 1980).

b Vitality

Vitality class is recorded using the IUFRO guidelines (Leibundgut 1956; Mayer 1976) in a three-class scale:

- rankly developed trees (1)
- normally developed trees (2)
- indigently developed trees (3)

c Inner crown cover

Inner crown cover is estimated as the cover inside the crown projection of a

tree, using the decimal scale of Londo (1984):

- cover from 0 to 15 percent (1)
- cover from 15 to 25 percent (2)
- cover from 25 to 35 percent (3)

.....

- cover from 85 to 100 percent (9)

d Growth potential

Growth potential is classified after Hall et al. (1978):

- potential tree (1)
- tree of the present (2)
- tree of the past (3)

e Damage

Cause of damage is recorded after IUFRO guidelines:

- no visible damage (1)
- abiotic damage (2)
- biotic damage other than by game (3)
- complex damage (4 combination of 2 and 3)
- damage by game (5)

This code is completed with a second code number for the rate of damage:

- no damage (0 in combination with no visible damage in 10)
- little damage (1)
- moderate damage (2)
- severe damage (3)

Qualitative Characteristics of Dead Trees

a Dead wood position

For dead trees the tree position is expressed in the same code number:

- hanging dead trees (broken or uprooted, not yet on the forest floor) (6)
- dead trees or stumps standing upright (7)
- dead trees on the forest floor (8)
- stumps of trees cut by man (stem removed) (9)

b Rate of decay of dead wood

The foregoing code is completed with a second code number for the rate of decay of dead wood:

- fresh stump, trunk or branch, wood hard, intact bark, stem round in transverse section (1)
- wood can be superficially squashed (up to 1 cm), bark loose and partly dropped, stem round in transverse section (2)
- wood soft, most parts of the stem can be squashed up to several cm, bark dropped (except for species that first moulder inside an intact bark, such as *Ilex* and *Betula*, then to be judged on hardness of the wood, stem round in transverse section (3)
- thoroughly decayed soft wood, stem oval in transverse section, stem shows big gaps, the wood lost its consistency and disintegrates when touched (4)
- remains of the tree can only be recognized in the litter layer or are marked by a deviant vegetation (5)
- stumps of naturally died or uprooted trees that have been cut and removed by man afterwards (9). For example, an uprooting with a cut stump and a removed stem receives code 89 (removed lying dead wood). The stump of cut, already dead, trees (code 79) mostly cannot be distinguished from the one of cut living trees (code 72 for example). If dead trees attacked by the dutch elm

disease are cut to prevent the spread of the disease by bark beetles, such trees may be coded with 79.

- A code is added for trees or logs that have disappeared since a previous observation (0). The cause of their loss may be mouldering, drift (in flooded forests), or harvest by man.

Parameters of Uprootings

- a **Depth of the pit and height of the mound of uprootings**
 Depth of the pit and height of the mound of the micro relief due to uprooting are measured at the deepest and highest points respectively, using the forest floor surface as the zero level for perpendicular measuring lines.
- b **Rate of flattening of micro-relief due to uprooting**
 The rate of flattening of micro-relief due to uprooting is classified according to Koop (1981):
- recently uprooted tree, little of the soil clinging to the root system dropped (1)
 - the mass of earth above the main root zone has fallen, roots and stem are partly decayed, the pit is partly filled up with litter, mixed with the fallen earth mass from the root system (2)
 - the tree has mouldered away and the pit is filled up for the greater part (3)
 - height of the mound decreased, the slight micro-relief is hardly recognizable (4)
- c **Charting of uprootings**
 Apart from standing and fallen trees, the mound and pit of uprootings are charted.

Description of Computer Programs

Scheme of Processing of Vegetation Data

TRANSASS.HBA

Husky BASIC program for the assessment of the herbaceous transect area plots of 2 x 2 m². A species list of a previous assessment is provided on the computer screen. A search routine enables to find a species by its abbreviation. New species can be added and species names can be edited during the program run. The sum of species cover of individual species is checked against the total cover. Corrections can be made at any time in any of the relevés.

VEGINPUT

VAX-FORTRAN-77 for input from field form in files (*.FUL) of vegetation data.

CONVERS

GFA-BASIC program on the ATARI for conversion of the format of data files from the HUSKI to *.VEG and *.OPN files, containing respectively species cover data and data on total cover of vegetation layers per relevé, that can be loaded with the program VEGINORA in the ORACLE database.

OPNACON

VAX-FORTRAN-77 program for conversion of vegetation data files from the editor (*.DAT) or from the program VEGINPUT (*.FUL) to *.VEG and *.OPN files, containing respectively species cover data and data on total cover of vegetation layers data of per relevé, that can be loaded with the program VEGINORA in the ORACLE database.

VEGINORA This DCL procedure generates a SQL command procedure that loads vegetation data files (*.DAT or *.FUL) in the ORACLE database.

ORACLEX

This VAX/VMS DCL command procedure uses SQL commands and selects and sorts vegetation data from the ORACLE database on year, location of the core area, species or vegetation layer. A standard file (VEGETATION.LIS) with selected tree data is the output of the program.

DECIM

A VAX-FORTRAN-77 program for conversion of cover data that are stored as symbols of a specific cover scale to a decimal scale.

ORACON

A VAX-FORTRAN-77 program for conversion of decimal cover data to the so-called CORNELL condensed format needed for running application programs.

NAMCEK

This VAX-FORTRAN-77 program checks species names for correct spelling.

COMBI

This VAX-FORTRAN-77 program combines output of ELLEN with machine readable output of TWINSPAN or DECORANA (*.EMR, *.TMR, *.DMR) in one file (*.CMB), that can be used for regression between Ellenberg values and axis of ordination. The file can also be used to plot figures with SILVISTAT.

Scheme for Processing of Tree Data

ARBODIGI

A GW-BASIC program on an OLIVETTI-PC for digitizing X- and Y- values of stem base and peripheral points of crowns in handdrawn plans and profiles on a CALCOMP digitizer tablet.

COREAREA.HBA

Husky BASIC program run on the hand-held computer for core area tree characteristics inventory, co-ordinate measurements and Dbh and height measurements with connected electronic calliper and altimeter.

PRECONTR

A VAX-FORTRAN-77 program that combines field form files with digitized plans to a so-called standard file (*.STF) that can be plotted with ARBOPLOT and checked by ARBOCONTR.

ARBOCONTR

A VAX-FORTRAN-77 program that checks a standard file (*.STF) on errors caused by unrealistic combinations of data from field forms and ground plan. The errors may have been caused by tree number interchange, wrong notes on the field forms, errors made in typing the field forms or digitizing the plans. The program outputs the file *.COR in which detected errors are sorted according to error classes. Together with a preliminary plot of the standard file with the program ARBOPLOT on the ATARI field station, computer errors can be checked in the field. If data come from direct HUSKI hand-held computer input a run of ARBOCONTR is redundant.

POSTCONTR

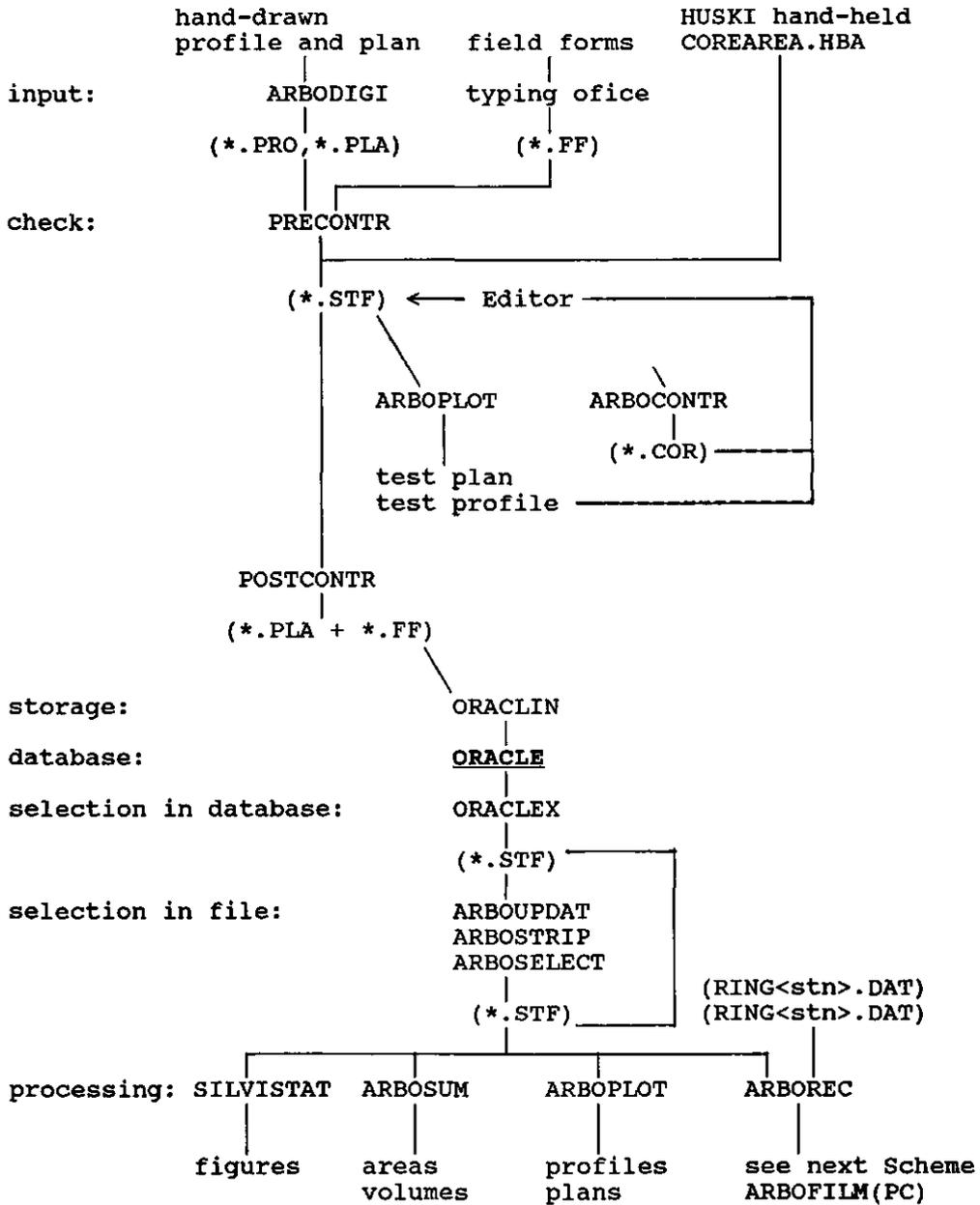
This VAX-FORTRAN-77 program unravels a corrected standard file (*.STF) into the field form files (*.FF1) and a file with plan co-ordinates (*.PLA) that can be loaded in the ORACLE database.

ORACLIN

This VAX/VMS DCL command procedure generates a SQL procedure which loads field form files (*.FF) and a file with plan co-ordinates (*.PLA) in the ORACLE database.

ORACLEX

This VAX/VMS DCL command procedure generates a SQL procedure which selects and sorts tree data from the ORACLE database on year, location of the core area on the position of trees in the core area and on other fields of a standard file such as tree number, species, Dbh, tree height etc. A standard file (*.STF) with selected tree data is the output of the program.



ARBOUPDAT

This VAX-FORTRAN-77 program selects the most recent data per tree number from a standard file (*.STF).

ARBOSTRIP

This VAX-FORTRAN-77 program selects all trees in a specified strip transect through the core area from a standard file (*.STF).

ARBOSELECT

This VAX-FORTRAN-77 program can provide selections from a standard file (*.STF) similar as can be made in ORACLEX. The advantage lies in shorter computation time.

SILVISTAT

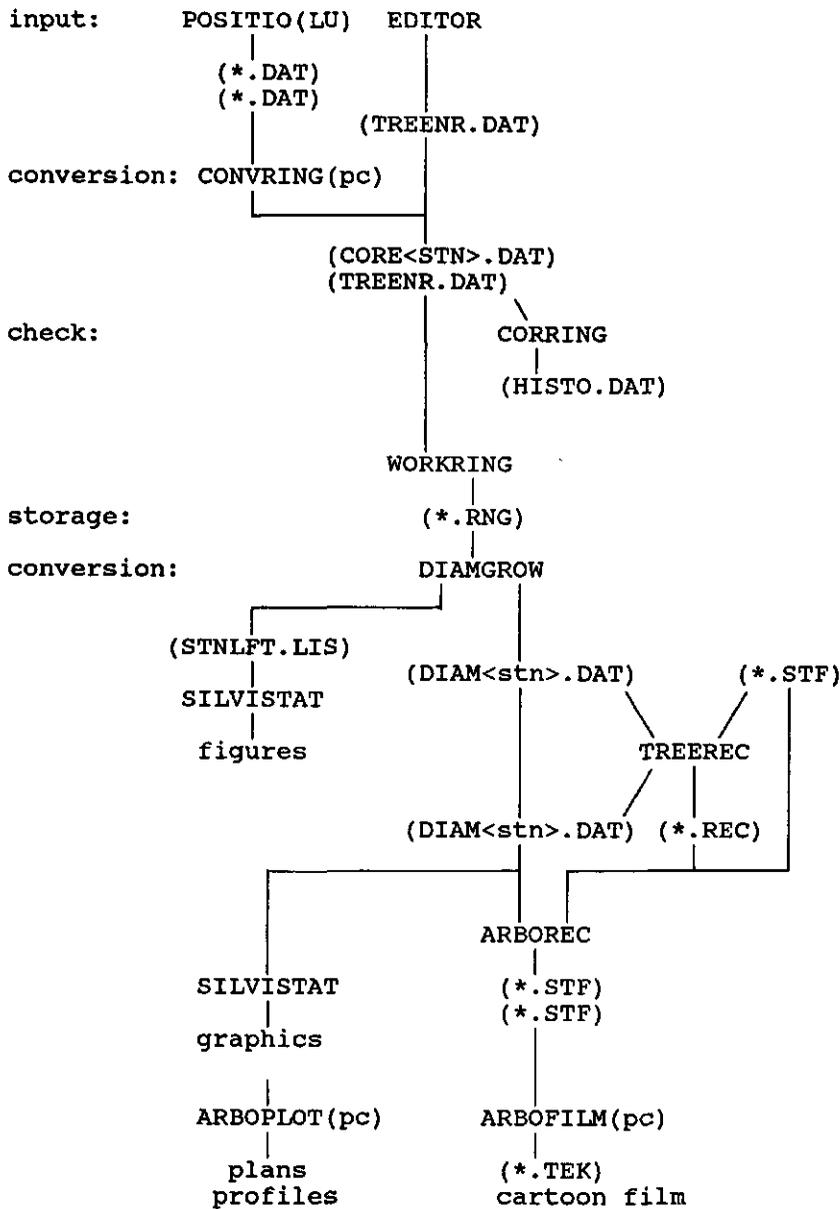
A VAX-FORTRAN-77 program for plotting frequency diagrams, point plots, regression curves, making use of the program package GENSTAT.

ARBOSUM

VAX FORTRAN-77 program computing crown areas, real crown cover, crown volumes and basal areas per tree, per species, per 10 x 10 m block and per hectare.

ARBOPLOT.FOR

A VAX-FORTRAN program also GFA-BASIC version for ATARI and GW- BASIC version for OLIVETTI for plotting crown maps and profiles of forest structure. On PC computers also use of screen graphics.



POSITIO

A FORTRAN program running on a PC in combination with a digitizer tablet for measuring tree ring cores (Agricultural University Wageningen, Department of forest ecology and silviculture). Tree rings widths per tree are written to *.DAT files.

CONVRING

A VAX-FORTRAN-77 program for conversion of *.DAT files of the program POSITIO to the format of CORE<STN>.DAT.

CORRING

A VAX-FORTRAN-77 program to check and convert raw tree ring data files. The program outputs histograms of sequential tree ring widths in files HISTO.DAT used to check and synchronize tree rings in different samples.

WORKRING

A VAX-FORTRAN-77 program for averaging corresponding tree ring widths of two samples of the same tree and calculating tree age. When necessary tree age is extrapolated. Tree rings are corrected for the real diameter of the tree and written to a file *.RNG.

DIAMGROW

A VAX-FORTRAN-77 program that computes cumulative diameter growth of sampled trees. Results are written to files DIAM<STN>.DAT.

TREEREC

A VAX-FORTRAN-77 that simulates a new standard file (*.REC) and tree ring file (DIAM<STN>.DAT) for trees that have died of which now tree ring sample is available and that have no actual crown dimensions. A new tree record in a standard file is generated according specified tree dimensions and new tree ring files are reconstructed from trees that have been indicated for reference.

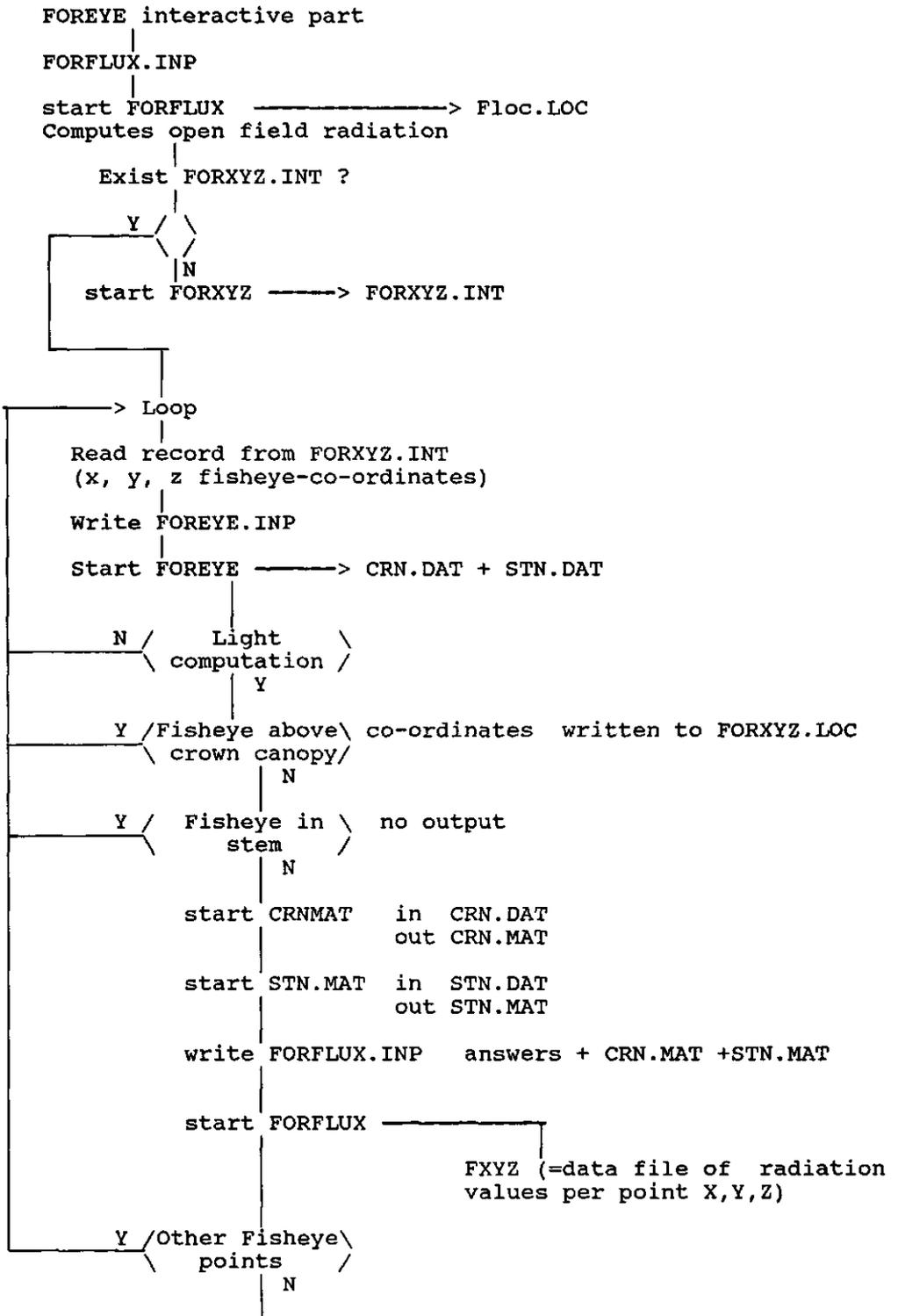
ARBOREC

A VAX-FORTRAN-77 program that produces reconstructed standard files (*.STF) per year according regression of Dbh against all other tree dimensions using the present tree data (*.STF) and optionally reconstructed tree data (*.REC). The Dbh for a year is read from DIAM<STN>.DAT files.

ARBOFILM

With this GW-BASIC program the reconstructed sequential yearly standard files (*.STF) are used to draw plans and profiles on the computer screen which are saved as screen files (*.TEK). By sequential loading of the screen files a cartoon film can be presented. Optionally on a colour screen per species different colours can be specified.

Scheme of the Program and Procedure FOREYE



The program FOREYE is written as a VAX/VSM DCL (Digital Command Language) command procedure that subsequently starts VAX-FORTRAN programs. An interactive procedure FOREYE starts a non-interactive procedure SUBFOREYE in batch. The specifications given in the interactive part are written to a file FORFLUX.INP, which is used as input for other programs in the rest of the procedure. Where necessary during the rest of the procedure information from preceding to following programs is transferred via this file FORFLUX.INP as well.

FORXYZ

A program that computes a X, Y, Z, grid, which can be specified in the interactive part of the FOREYE procedure. At each point of the grid hemispherical light computations will be made. The program outputs a file FORXYZ.INT. If a file FORXYZ.INT, with specified points for fish-eye computations, already exists the program is not run.

FORFLUX

A program that computes radiation values from hemispherical coverage matrix files (CRN.MAT for degrees covered by crowns and STN.MAT for degrees covered by stems). The output is a set of data files per point in the X, Y, Z grid (specified in FORXYZ.INT), that contain daily radiation values. Each file FORXY.ZZ (for example at point (100, 30, 0 the file name is FOR10030.Z0_) contains daily sun duration, diffuse light clear sky, diffuse light overcast sky, diffuse light total and total radiation. To prevent the program to run more than once for identical fish-eye points above the tree canopy without any hemispherical cover at all, at the beginning of the procedure, FORFLUX is run once for an uncovered hemisphere. The resulting values for radiation are substituted later on for all points without hemispherical cover that are registered during the run in the file FORXYZ.LOC.

FOREYE

A program that computes the vertical and horizontal degrees that delimit separate tree crowns and tree stems (see chapter VI). The program produces the files CRN.DAT for tree crowns and STN.DAT for tree stems (see Fig. 6.1).

FORPLOT

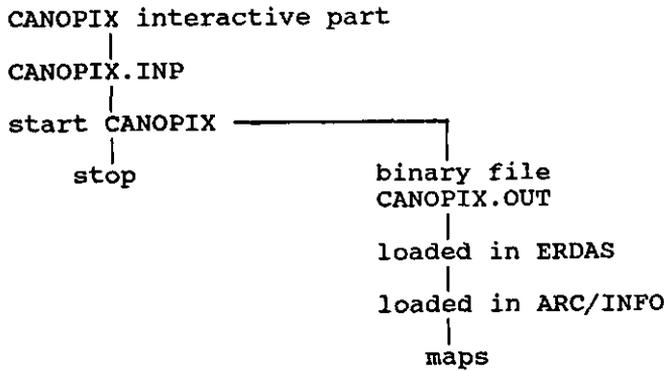
A program plots separate tree crowns and/or stems in a horizontogram from the files CRN.DAT and STN.DAT on a HP-plotter. There is an option to add sun tracks to the horizontogram (see Fig. 6.2).

CRN.MAT and STN.MAT

A program that converts single tree coverage data from CRN.DAT and STN.DAT to a hemispherical coverage matrix for all trees together.

READFLUX

A program that must be run after the SUBFOREYE procedure and combines a set of FORXY.ZZ files with radiation values of separate fisheye points that were specified in the grid file FORXYZ.INT to one file. This file per record contains X, Y, Z, item 1, item 2,.... The items can be the different radiation values computed in FOREYE averaged over a period of days to be specified. This file is converted to ARC/INFO format to produce maps of the different aspects of radiation.



The program CANOPIX is written as a combination of DCL (Digital Command Language) command procedure that subsequently starts VAX- FORTRAN programs. An interactive procedure CANOPIX starts a non- interactive procedure in batch. The specifications given in the interactive part are written to a file CANOPIX.INP, which is used as input for other programs in the rest of the procedure.

Forest Objects Under Study with the Monitoring System

A list of all forest objects included in the monitoring system in December 1988.

Core areas

Object	Owner
Kijfhoek	Duinwaterleiding Den Haag
Fontainebleau I en II	French State Forest Service
Bentheim	Fürst zu Bentheim (F.R.G.)
Ile de Rhina	Gemeente Rhinau (France)
Motketel	Kroondomein
Naardermeer oude kooi	NM
Norgerholt	NM
Otterskooi	NM
Weenderbos	NM
Bialowieza I en II	Polish state
Wilgenreservaat	RIJP
Keizersdijk	SBB
Schone Grub	SBB
Galgenberg (Amerongen)	SBB bosreservaat
Grootvenbos	SBB bosreservaat
Het Leesten	SBB bosreservaat
Het Quin	SBB bosreservaat
Lheebroekerzand (Dwingeloo)	SBB bosreservaat

Meerdijk (Spijkbos)	SBB bosreservaat
Nieuw Milligen	SBB bosreservaat
Pijpebrandje/Dikkenest	SBB bosreservaat
Schoorl	SBB bosreservaat
Star Numansbos (Gaasterland)	SBB bosreservaat
Tussen de Goren (Chaam)	SBB bosreservaat
Vechtelanden (Ommen)	SBB bosreservaat
Vijlnerbos	SBB bosreservaat
Zeesserveld (Ommen)	SBB bosreservaat
't Sang	SBB bosreservaat
Noordhout	Utrechts Landschap

Transects

Object	Owner
Marienwaard	Baron Verschuer
Anses wood (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
Beaulieu river (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
Berry wood (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
Bratley wood (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
Denny wood (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
Fritham plain (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
Hollands wood (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
Mark ash wood (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
Pinnick wood (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
Rushpole wood (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
White moor (New Forest)	Forestry Commission
Noorddijk	Gelders Landschap
Edese bos I en II	Gemeente Ede
Oevermansbos (Emmen)	Gemeente Emmen
Bekendelle	NM
Grevenmaat	NM
Herenduinen	NM
Leuvenumsebos	NM
Molenduinen I en II	NM
Wolfheze I en II	NM
Nijenbeek	Privat owner
Beerenplaat	SBB
Berkenvalei (2 x, Terschelling)	SBB
Broekhuizen I en II	SBB
Gerendal	SBB
Kroonpolder (Terschelling)	SBB
Schoonlo	SBB
Smilde (2x)	SBB
Ugchelen	SBB
Willinkweust	SBB
Galgenberg	SBB

Glossary

Architecture

The visible, morphological, expression of the genetic blueprint of organic growth and development (Hallé et al. 1978).

Architectural code

Code expressing the growth potential of trees, to what set or ensemble a tree belongs.

Architectural tree model

Generalized growth program which determines successive phases of a tree (Hallé et al. 1978).

Canopy

More or less closed upper layer of tree crowns.

Chablis

A gap in the forest produced by the fall of a tree; the fall of the tree itself and the resulting forest damage (from the French) (Hallé et al. 1978).

Core area

The area in the information system measuring 70 x 140 or 50 x 140 m where detailed information on position of trees and tree crowns is collected.

Coppice

Woodland management system with trees cut at regular intervals

Crown area index (CAI)

Total projected crown area above unit area of ground surface; a measure of canopy density (Hallé et al. 1978).

Crown projection

Vertical projection of the crown periphery on a horizontal ground plane.

Eccentricity

Eccentricity of the tree base, tree fork, tree crown base and top of the tree are expressed in x- and y-direction of the co-ordinate system as the ratio of distance from the point concerned to the centre of the crown and the crown radius.

Ecotope

Combination of niche and habitat occupied by a plant (Hallé et al. 1978).

Eco-unit

see Regeneration unit

Emergent

An isolated tree standing above the average forest canopy (Hallé et al. 1978).

Ensemble

see Set

Feature space

Multidimensional space where vectors represent the values of color bands of a pixel from a digital remote sensing image.

Forest type area

The area in which one forest type is studied every 10 years for those aspects concerning the hierarchical level of the silvatic unit.

Groundtruth

Field data on objects seen on remote sensing images, necessary for interpretation of the remote sensing image.

Herbaceous transect area

Area in which the herbaceous species, mosses and liverworts are described every 3 years.

Hierarchy

Here hierarchy in systems; a system is composed of subsystems, which in turn are composed of smaller subsystems.

Inversion point, morphological

The insertion of the lowest major limb of a tree above which all branch or reiterative complexes are progressively smaller (Hallé et al. 1978).

Inversion surface, morphological

Collective of inversion points of individual trees in a forest, indicative for that forest's status (Hallé et al. 1978).

Layer

The collective of plant life-forms that occupies a certain height interval.

Line transect

Transect drawing in which all trees are drawn of which the crown projection intersects or touches the midline of the transect.

Minimum area

Area needed to have a complete species composition

Minimum structure area

see Silvatic unit

Niche

The energetic position of a species in a community (Hallé et al. 1978).

Periphery

Greatest width of the crown, in fact the crown projection.

Peripheral point

In the tree model the four extreme points in positive and negative x- or y-direction of a coordinate system are called peripheral points.

Peripheral plane

Plane in the tree model at the peripheral height level in which the peripheral points stretch up quarter ellipses.

Peripheral height

The averaged height of the peripheral points of a tree.

Permanent plot

Plot that is permanently marked in the field and is reassessed in time.

Phase

State in a cyclic successional series that is characterized by the age of the stage of which it is part.

PNV

see Potential Natural Vegetation

Potential Natural Vegetation

The species composition that would develop, under present existing abiotic circumstances, without human interference and within a time span over which the vegetation can reach its end state (Tüxen 1956). A stand without progressive succession is already its own PNV.

Potential tree

Tree with potential for future expansion within the forest mosaic (Hallé et al. 1978).

Profile drawing

Drawing of side view of a line or block transect.

Reiteration

Development of shoots outside the normal expression of the architectural model of a tree, as a specialized environmental response (Hallé et al. 1978).

Regeneration unit

The regeneration unit or eco-unit is: "every surface on which at one moment in time a vegetation development has begun, of which the architecture, ecophysiological functioning and species composition are ordained by one set of trees until the end" (Oldeman 1983, 1989).

Relevé

Inventory of plant species and their cover of a plot.

Sapling

Young tree (here less than 5 cm Dbh)

Seedling

Tree less than 1 year old

Set (or ensemble)

Group of trees within a forest with equivalent developmental potential (e.g. potential set, set of the present and past) (Hallé et al. 1978).

Site mosaic

Complete mosaic consisting of different sites, with different abiotic conditions, characteristic for a region.

Stand

see Regeneration unit

Stage (of cyclic succession)

State in a successional series determined by its own characteristic species composition.

Strip transect

Rectangular transect plot in which only trees with their stem base within the plot are included.

Structural ensemble

Subdivision of the set of the present according to height (Hallé et al. 1978).

Sylvatic mosaic or unit

The minimum surface at any one site needed for all architectural growth phases of all locally possible eco-units (Oldeman 1989).

Synusiums

Groups of plant populations that belong to one life form or are separated from other populations in time or space or by a fundamentally deviant use of the site (Barkman 1973).

Thinning

Cutting of trees to favour other trees in their growth
Tree of the present
Dominant tree which codetermines forest architecture, but without further capability for expansion (Hallé et al. 1978).

Tree of the past

Over-mature, decaying or damaged tree in the process of elimination from the forest mosaic (Hallé et al. 1978).

Uprooting

The fall of a tree, where the root system is uplifted from the soil and the resulting mound-and-pit micro-relief.

Woody transect area

Rectangular 10-m-wide area in the centre of the core area, in which a side view is drawn.

Zenith

Top of the hemisphere vertically above the observers point.

a, b	Half axis of an ellipse in the crown projection
B	Stem base
Bax	X co-ordinate of stem base
Bay	Y co-ordinate of stem base
Baz	Z height co-ordinate of the stem base
C	Base of the crown
Cr _x	Crown radius in X direction
Dbh	Diameter breast height of the stem
E	Exponent of the vertical crown curves
eB _x	Eccentricity of the tree base in X direction
eT _y	Eccentricity of the tree top in Y direction
F	First branching fork of the stem
HC	Height of C
HF	Height of F
HP	Height of P
HT	Height of T
M _x	Centre point of the crown in transverse section in X direction
MP _n	Peripheral point on the mound of an uprooting
P _n	Peripheral point at the height of the crown with the greatest width
P _{1x}	X co-ordinate of the first peripheral point
P _{1y}	Y co-ordinate of the first peripheral point
T	Top of the crown
T _x	X co-ordinate of the top of the crown
T _y	Y co-ordinate of the top of the crown
V	View point of the fish-eye photograph

Species Index

- Acer campestre* 74, 156
 platanoides 101, 159
 pseudoplatanus 21, 136, 139
Agrostis stolonifera 139, 145
Alno Padion 156, 159
Alnus glutinosa 21, 117, 122-131, 153, 154, 157-159
 spp. 112, 113, 117
 glutinosa x incana 117, 158
Anemone nemorosa 139, 143, 145
Athyrium filix-femina 139, 140, 145
Betula spp 109, 124, 131, 154
 pendula 57, 122, 123
 pubescens 21, 125-129, 131, 153, 156, 157-159
Blechnum spicant 143, 145
Brachypodium sylvaticum 74
 pinatum 74
Carpinus betulus 95, 99-103, 139, 140, 143, 145, 153, 154, 156, 158, 159
Carex pilulifera 74
 remota 139, 145
Carici elongatae-Alnetum 131, 133
Clematis vitalba 115, 117
Corydalis claviculata 172
Corylus avellana 21, 100, 158, 159
Crataegus spp. 111
Deschampsia cespitosa 145, 167
 flexuosa 74, 139, 140, 143, 145
Dryopteris carthusiana 139, 143, 145
 dilatata 139, 140, 143, 145
Fago-Quercetum 14, 74, 86, 90, 109, 111, 137-140, 143, 147, 155, 156, 159, 171
Fagus sylvatica 45, 57, 63, 71, 74, 86, 139, 141, 143, 145, 149, 150, 153-155, 159, 171
Festuca heterophylla 74
Frangula alnus 145, 156-158
Fraxino-Ulmetum 112, 115, 156, 159, 172
Fraxinus excelsior 21, 74, 113, 115, 117, 118, 122, 123, 125-131, 136, 150, 151, 153, 154, 156-158
Galeopsis tetrahit 139, 145
Hedera helix 139, 140, 145
Ilex aquifolium 74, 111, 139-141, 143, 145
Juncus effusus 145
Lamium galeobdolon 139, 145
Lonicera periclymenum 74, 139, 145
Lysimachio-Quercetum 131, 133
Malus sylvestris 109
Melica uniflora 74
Melico-Fagetum 74, 86, 90, 153

<i>Milio-Fagetum</i>	14, 135, 137, 139, 145
<i>Milium effusum</i>	139, 141, 145
<i>Moehringia trinervia</i>	172
<i>Oreopteris limbosperma</i>	143, 145
<i>Oxalis acetosella</i>	30, 139-141, 143, 145
<i>Phegopteris connectilus</i>	143, 145
<i>Picea abies</i>	45, 95, 99-101, 103, 106, 153, 154, 158
<i>Pinus sylvestris</i>	45, 57, 62, 109, 150, 151, 153, 154
<i>radiata</i>	43
<i>Poa nemoralis</i>	145
<i>Polypodium vulgare</i>	143, 145
<i>Populus alba</i>	117, 118
<i>nigra</i>	117, 118
spp.	113, 117, 118, 136
<i>tremula</i>	21, 93, 95, 99-101, 103, 106, 117, 118, 156, 171
<i>Pruno-Fraxinetum</i>	131, 133, 156, 159, 172
<i>Prunus fruticans</i>	117, 157, 158
<i>padus</i>	113, 117, 153, 154, 157, 158
<i>spinosa</i>	111
<i>Pteridium aquilinum</i>	25, 74, 89, 109
<i>Quercus robur</i>	21, 45, 57, 63, 93, 95, 100, 101, 106, 109, 112, 113, 115, 117, 118, 122, 123, 125, 131, 136, 139, 145, 150-154, 157-159, 171
<i>petraea</i>	74
<i>Rubus fruticosus</i>	74, 139, 140, 143, 145
<i>idaeus</i>	139, 145
<i>Ruscus aculeatus</i>	74
<i>Salix alba</i>	134, 135
<i>caprea</i>	156
<i>cinerea</i>	21
<i>alba x fragilis</i>	134
<i>multinervis</i>	123, 127, 129, 157, 158
spp.	112
<i>triandra</i>	136-138
<i>Sambucus nigra</i>	128, 157
<i>Scutellaria galericulata</i>	139
<i>Sorbus aucuparia</i>	21, 123, 127-129, 139-141, 145, 153, 154, 156- 158, 161
<i>Stellaria holostea</i>	145
<i>Stellario-Carpinetum</i>	14, 92, 137-139, 143-145
<i>Tilia cordata</i>	75, 93, 95, 100, 103, 106, 159
<i>Tilio-Carpinetum</i>	92, 96, 99, 159, 171
<i>Ulmus glabra</i>	93
<i>laevis</i>	117
spp.	113-115, 118
<i>Urtica dioica</i>	93, 136
<i>Vaccinium myrtillus</i>	167
<i>vitis idaea</i>	167

Subject Index

- aerial photograph 18, 21, 23, 25, 34, 45, 69
- architectural code 32, 39, 60, 74, 124
- avifauna 171
- basal area 59-61, 137, 148, 149, 151, 171
- canopy
 - gap 10, 34, 40, 64, 65, 69-71, 101, 117, 148
4, 14, 18, 25, 38, 64, 68, 74, 78, 79, 86, 87, 89,
92, 103, 106, 110, 115, 117, 123, 135, 138-140,
143, 159, 160, 162
69, 70, 80, 81, 95
 - height 21, 23, 98
- charting
 - tree 26-29
 - vegetation 35
- classification
 - maximum likelihood 7, 19, 22, 23
122
 - hand 25, 35
 - tree 26, 30, 33
- cluster
 - techniques 68, 139-144, 147
 - transition 25, 35, 68, 139
68, 140, 143, 144
- competition 4, 6, 16, 18, 64, 70, 89, 94, 109, 126, 138, 139,
151, 170, 176
- computer
 - files 7, 33, 59, 60
25
 - hand-held computer 16, 25, 28, 29, 33, 41
 - program 18, 28, 59
 - model 44
- co-ordinate
 - system 48
 - tree 28, 49
- core area 15, 17, 21, 25-28, 33-36, 39, 41, 57, 59-63, 65,
67-70, 74, 78-92, 94-97, 99-101, 103-106, 112,
114, 117-124, 129-137, 148, 150, 153-163, 171,
171, 175, 176
- cover
 - inner crown cover 59, 61, 66-68, 70, 148-152, 178
 - crown cover 59, 148-150
- crown
 - area 59-61, 137, 148, 153
148
 - area index 29, 30, 46, 50, 52, 59, 65, 70
 - base 53, 151, 153, 154
 - diameter 39, 50, 68
 - periphery 27, 28, 33, 38, 39, 45, 47-50, 55, 57, 59, 65, 68,
71, 124-126, 134, 149, 162
 - projection 54
 - section horizontal 45, 46, 51, 55, 58, 66
 - section transverse 39, 51, 53, 55, 65, 66, 69, 70, 134, 136, 151
 - surface 29, 30, 45, 46, 49-55, 61, 65, 66, 68-71
 - top

- volume 59, 60, 148, 149, 171
- cutting 4, 12, 77, 89, 90, 94, 106, 109, 111, 114, 171
 - clear-cut 6, 75, 89, 92, 109, 110, 172
- database 7, 8, 16, 25, 33, 34, 41, 59, 170
- dating
 - tree breaks 33, 86, 99, 101
 - ¹⁴C dating charcoal 75
 - uprooting 27, 86, 96, 99, 101
- diameter
 - diameter at breast height 25, 26, 33, 71, 79, 105, 129, 153-158
 - increment 106
 - measurement 29
- digitizer tablet 28-33
- digitized
 - aerial photograph 21, 122
 - map 16
 - tree charting 23, 28, 33, 123
- dead wood 25, 27, 30, 33, 75, 78, 89, 90, 96, 98, 174
- eccentricity 49, 50
 - index 50
- ellipse 46, 51, 54
 - quarter 45-47, 54, 55, 58, 65, 66, 77
- ensemble
 - structural 153-162
- equilibrium 11, 14, 22, 90
- flattening 32, 33, 97-103
- forest
 - dynamics 5, 7, 8, 11, 27, 32, 39, 74, 92, 96, 106, 112, 119, 129, 134, 137, 140, 143, 170, 172, 173, 176
 - history 21, 27, 75, 92, 98, 106, 112, 117, 119-123, 129
 - management 3-7, 9, 10, 12, 13, 16, 22, 75, 77, 89, 90, 94, 103, 120, 170-172, 175
 - profile analyses 5, 179
 - structure 4, 5, 9, 12, 15, 18, 21, 22, 26-29, 33, 34, 38, 59, 64, 65, 68, 70, 71, 90, 92, 106, 109, 119, 121, 123, 129, 133, 134, 138, 140, 148, 154, 170-172
 - type area 15, 17, 19, 21, 25, 41
- format 25, 41, 59
- fragmentation 90, 109-111, 172
- fusion 79, 81, 110
- generation changes 90, 109, 110, 119, 172
- grazing 4-6, 75, 89, 94, 101, 103, 106-111, 173
- groundtruth 15, 23, 25, 171
- growth
 - forest 86, 96, 101, 115
 - tree 4, 7, 8, 11, 18, 64, 70, 71, 79, 86, 89, 101
 - reaction 70, 86, 99, 100, 110, 117, 119, 156-160, 167, 172, 176, 177, 179
- height measurements 29, 46
 - height-diameter ratio 45, 155-158, 178
- herbs 4, 6, 8, 64, 138, 171
- herbaceous transect area 15, 17, 26, 27, 35, 39-41, 65, 68, 75, 119, 134, 140-145, 167, 176

- hierarchy theory 11-13
- light 16, 18
 - climate 80, 103, 151, 154, 156, 159, 160, 167, 175, 177
 - competition for 109, 151, 176
 - demanding tree species 89, 140, 143, 159
 - diffuse 64, 65, 68
 - direct 68
 - map 167
 - plan 162
 - profile 162
 - simulation 64, 171
- map 8, 12, 16
 - crown projection 75, 124-126, 162
 - dead wood 27, 99
 - forest history 21, 75, 76, 103, 112, 119, 120
 - forest structure 21, 22, 25, 75, 89, 94, 121, 122
 - old 21, 112
 - tree species 69, 123
 - vegetation 6, 10, 19, 21, 25, 26, 35-37, 39, 40, 92, 120, 167, 175
- micro-relief 27, 47, 57, 97
- minimum area 5, 13, 14, 39
 - minimum structure area 14, 139
- mosaic 89, 90, 103, 110, 117, 170
 - development 74, 91, 92, 94, 109, 115, 171
 - regeneration 13, 17, 19, 133
 - site 13, 14, 17, 21, 106, 111, 122, 133, 139, 172
 - silvatic 173
 - shifting 5, 8, 14, 18, 25, 41, 175
- mosses 62, 79-81, 84, 94-96, 103, 115, 119
- network pattern 5, 111, 172, 174
- niche 11
- non-equilibrium 68, 124, 139, 141
- ordination 8, 13, 14, 16, 18, 23, 36, 109-111, 122, 133, 140
- patches 4, 8, 10-14, 18, 21, 22, 25, 26, 35, 39-41, 44
- pattern 64
 - shading 5, 10, 35, 39, 41, 109
- permanent quadrat
- peripheral 53
 - height 54, 68
 - level 57, 58
 - pit point 47, 51, 53-55, 66
 - plane 28, 33, 46-52, 54, 55, 57
 - point 4, 22, 84, 139, 171
- phase 14, 90, 92, 173
 - developmental 22, 121, 122
 - gap 21, 22, 121, 122, 143
 - poletree 10, 21, 22, 106, 121, 122, 138
 - tree 22, 109
 - treeless 21, 22, 92, 121, 122, 138
 - thicket

- of decay 22, 23, 62, 90, 109, 149, 153
- photograph
 - aerial 18, 21, 23, 34, 45, 69, 122, 123, 131, 134, 140, 171
 - hemispherical 64, 65, 67
 - sequential ground 84, 87, 103, 117, 120, 135, 141, 144
- photography
 - aerial 18, 21, 23, 25, 34
 - sequential ground 10, 33, 34
 - sequential aerial 34
- pioneer
 - forest 89, 92, 109, 115, 117, 118
 - species 153
- pixel
 - training 69, 70, 122
- pollution 23, 172
- potential natural vegetation 19, 25, 129, 133, 173
- profile
 - analyses 5, 8, 10
 - computer plotted 45, 59, 62
 - drawing 12, 16, 26, 33, 37-40, 49, 53
 - soil 19, 133
- projection
 - centred 69
 - crown 27, 28, 33, 37-39, 45-50, 55, 57-59, 65, 124-126, 134, 149, 150, 162
 - orthographic 69
- pressler borer 33, 72
- radiation 64, 65, 161
 - diffuse 162, 163, 165
 - direct 161, 162, 164, 166, 167
 - model 68, 172-174, 177
 - oblique 14, 38, 64, 65, 167
- reconstruction 7, 70, 86, 96, 106, 115, 119, 120, 124, 125, 140, 176
 - diameter 70
 - tree dimensions 70
- regeneration
 - phase 106-108
 - mosaic 74, 79, 91, 92, 94, 109, 115, 171
 - unit 5, 12-14, 17, 21-23, 26, 37, 39, 74, 79-81, 86-89, 95, 96, 99, 103, 119, 155, 156, 177
 - unit complex 22, 23
 - wave 84, 86, 92, 100, 109, 117, 118
- regression 59, 70, 71, 153, 154, 158
- relevé 25, 41, 65, 68, 75, 102, 124, 134, 139-147
- remote sensing 10, 15, 23
 - image 69
- river-bank effect 103
- saplings 25
- seedlings 25
- site type 4, 5, 13, 19, 25, 110, 139, 155, 156, 158, 171-173

- site mosaic 13, 17, 19, 133
- shape
 - tree crowns 18, 39, 44-46, 55, 57, 66
- shifting mosaic 173
- simulation 8, 18, 44, 45, 47, 160, 176
- aerial view 69
- light 64, 160, 171, 175-177
- soil
 - disturbance 10, 12, 32, 96
 - type 74, 76, 92, 112, 119, 126, 127
- stage
 - of decay of dead wood 30, 33, 87, 99
 - of forest development 19, 23, 96, 134, 139
 - of flattening (uprooting) 32, 88, 89, 90, 97, 99-101, 103
- statistical analyses 12, 59
- storm 4, 33, 77, 89, 90, 99, 100, 103, 140, 141, 172
- transect 14, 26, 27, 35, 39, 68, 81, 84, 96, 106, 107, 111, 114, 132, 136-138
 - herbaceous 15, 17, 28, 34, 37, 38, 40, 49, 57, 59, 62, 69, 119, 134, 140-147, 167, 176
 - line 26
 - strip 26, 172
 - woody 15, 17, 28, 34, 37, 38, 40, 49, 57, 59, 62, 69, 86, 88, 101, 104, 106, 112-118, 164-166, 173, 175
- tree
 - altimeter 29
 - bending tree 45, 47, 57
 - caliper 29
 - damaged tree 18, 23, 32, 71
 - fall 18, 27, 28, 30, 49, 58, 71, 76, 79, 86, 87, 89, 90, 99, 100, 173, 177
 - model 16, 44, 46, 55, 64, 70
 - of the present 32, 100, 124-129, 131, 149-152, 155-158
 - of the past 32, 124-129, 131
 - potential tree 32, 94, 95, 100, 103, 124-129, 131, 149-152, 155-158
 - ring 5, 18, 74, 77, 78, 90, 92, 113, 119, 171
 - ring analyses 33, 70, 89, 94, 101, 117, 119
 - ring counting 33, 79, 114
 - senescent 23, 71, 89, 160
 - species distribution 25, 122, 123
 - trunk 39, 57
- undergrowth 4, 64, 94, 150
- uprooting 10, 14, 18, 27, 137, 178
 - dating of 70, 71, 86-90, 96, 99-103, 117
 - micro-relief 10, 11, 27, 32, 33, 47, 57, 58, 137, 143
- vegetation
 - map 10, 21, 25, 33, 35-37, 39, 92, 120, 167
 - structure 8, 21, 22, 35
 - types 14, 19, 25, 34-37, 39, 124-131, 133, 139, 167
 - units 25, 35

vegetative reproduction	117, 125
woodland	
ancient	4, 5, 19, 21, 77
pasture	106, 173
woody compartment	12, 17, 26